



UNIV OF
TORONTO
LIBRARY

6387
MEMOIRS

OF THE

LIFE

OF

THE RIGHT HONORABLE

WILLIAM PITT.

BY GEORGE TOMLINE, D.D. F.R.S.

LORD BISHOP OF WINCHESTER,

PRELATE OF THE MOST NOBLE ORDER OF THE GARTER.

THE FOURTH EDITION.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE-STREET.

M.DCCC.XXII.

DA

522

P6T6

1822

v.3

2252

22/4/90

20

Printed by Luke Hansard & Sons,
near Lincoln's-Inn Fields, London.

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRD VOLUME.

CHAPTER THE ELEVENTH:

*Navy and Ordnance Estimates—Repeal of the Shop Tax—
Budget—Excise of Tobacco—Petition from Mr. Hastings—
Motion for the Repeal of the Corporation and Test Acts—
Slave Trade—Increase of the Capital of the East India
Company—Prorogation of Parliament - - - page 1*

CHAPTER THE TWELFTH:

*French Revolution—Meeting of Parliament—Mr. Pitt's
Finance Measures—Other Proceedings in this Session—
Different Sentiments expressed by the leading Members of
Opposition relative to the French Revolution—Prorogation
and Dissolution of Parliament—Convention with Spain—
Proceedings in France—Hostilities in India - - - page 37.*

CHAPTER THE THIRTEENTH:

*War in the North of Europe—Meeting of new Parliament
—Spanish Convention—Expences of the late Armament—
Continuation of Mr. Hastings's Trial—War in India—
Russian Armament—Quebec Bill—Slave Trade—Finance
Committee—Budget—Bill for the Relief of Protesting
Roman Catholics—Prorogation - - - - page 142.*

CHAPTER THE FOURTEENTH:

Treaties of Peace—War in India—Affairs of France—Riots at Birmingham—Meeting of Parliament—Finance Measures—Russian Armament—Police of the Metropolis—Penal Laws against Dissenters—Parliamentary Reform—Royal Proclamation—Conduct of Magistrates at Birmingham—Slave Trade—New Forest Bill—Prorogation of Parliament—Dismissal of Lord Thurlow—Conclusion of the War in India—Mr. Pitt appointed Warden of the Cinque Ports - - - - - page 257.

CHAPTER THE FIFTEENTH:

Affairs in France—Relative Conduct of Great Britain and France—Revolutionary Spirit in England—Meeting of Parliament—Declaration of War by France against Great Britain and Holland—Review of Mr. Pitt's Measures - - - - - page 410.

MEMOIRS
OF THE
LIFE
OF
THE RIGHT HONORABLE
WILLIAM PITT.

CHAPTER THE ELEVENTH:

1789.

*Navy and Ordnance Estimates—Repeal of the Shop Tax—
Budget—Excise of Tobacco—Petition from Mr. Hastings—
Motion for the Repeal of the Corporation and Test Acts—
Slave Trade—Increase of the Capital of the East India
Company—Prorogation of Parliament.*

HAVING in the preceding chapter detail-
ed all the parliamentary proceedings,
relative to his majesty's illness and recovery,
I shall now give an account of the other busi-
ness of this session, which will not occupy
much space.

CHAP.
XL.

1789.

THE navy estimates contained a proposal
for 2,000 more seamen than were employed
in the former year, and that circumstance
caused a short conversation. Mr. Pitt, in ex-
planation, said, that of these additional sea-
men, 1,300 were wanted for the East Indies,

CHAP. and 700 for the Mediterranean, which aug-
 XL. mentations were considered by ministers as
 1789. necessary to preverve the country in a proper
 state of defence ; and the house acquiesced.

The ordnance estimates gave rise to a longer debate. When an increase of troops, to be stationed in the West Indies, was voted in the last year, Mr. Pitt apprized the house, that some additional fortifications, which would probably cost about 200,000*l.*, would be requisite in those islands. Of that sum, 36,000*l.* were included in the estimates of the present year ; and this expence was objected to as useless. The proposal for these new fortifications was defended upon the ground, that citadels and places of strength were indispensably necessary to enable the soldiers, in case any island was attacked, to hold out, till a fleet should come to their assistance. In support of this argument, it was observed, that the West Indian islands might easily be protected by fortifications, as they contained very few landing places, the trade winds, which blow so violently in those seas, making one side of the island inaccessible, and the coasts being in general rocky and dangerous ; that in the war before the last, Martinique, with 800 men, strongly garrisoned, had held out nearly a twelvemonth against 15,000 English troops ;

that in the last war, Dominica was taken by the French, merely because the military had not a fortress to retire to, till the fleet could afford them relief; that we lost several other islands from a similar want of fortifications; that during peace the present establishment of soldiers would be sufficient; that in time of war a smaller number, with fortifications, would be more serviceable than a much greater without; and that this important advantage might be procured for six of our islands, at the moderate expence which had been mentioned last year. This reasoning was so satisfactory to the house, that notwithstanding the prejudice against fortifications, the estimates were voted without any division.

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

THE shop tax had been extremely unpopular from its first imposition, in 1785; and the shopkeepers of London and Westminster, and Southwark, by whom it was most severely felt*, had every year presented petitions against it, to the house of commons. Mr. Fox had as regularly every session moved for the repeal of this obnoxious tax, which had hitherto been successfully resisted by Mr. Pitt, though he was not, upon those occasions, supported by

* London and Westminster paid more than three-fourths of the whole produce of this tax.

CHAP.

XL

1789.

his usual large majorities. Mr. Fox, on the second of April, brought forward his annual motion, which was seconded by Mr. H. Thornton, one of the members for Southwark, and supported by lord John Townshend, Mr. Fox's colleague for Westminster, and by several other members for large towns, who had received instructions for that purpose from their constituents. Mr. Pitt said, that he had constantly opposed the same motion in former years, on the ground that the tax would not fall upon the shopkeeper, but be paid, in the end, by the consumer; and that as far as argument was concerned, separately from experience, his mind was not satisfied, that the retail dealers could not find some mode of indemnification. He acknowledged, however, that the positive and uniform assertion of the shopkeepers, who had acquired experience upon the subject, denied the truth of his opinion; and their perseverance in that assertion, for so long a time, strongly inclined him to believe, that they had in reality not been able to reimburse themselves, by any additional charge upon goods sold to their customers. He farther admitted, that theory and reasoning ought not to prevail against practice; and he was, he owned, the more ready to make these concessions, because the objections and

complaints were not confined to any particular class of shopkeepers, but were urged by the shopkeepers in general of every considerable town, without reference to political party or prejudice of any sort. For these reasons, though he considered it to be his duty generally to resist any attempt to decrease the revenue, by the repeal of taxes objected to by the persons most affected by them, yet in the present instance, he thought it no longer proper to oppose his own sentiments, resting on theory, to the universal concurrence and earnest application of a numerous and respectable description of men, whose opinions were founded upon fact; and therefore he should not resist the motion, but give it his hearty consent.

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

The preamble of the bill for the repeal of this tax, as brought in by Mr. Fox, stated, that the tax had been found to be partial and oppressive, and contrary to the just principles of taxation. These words were objected to by Mr. Pitt; and upon his motion, and with Mr. Fox's acquiescence, they were omitted, and others substituted, simply stating, that it was expedient to repeal the tax. The bill passed without any opposition.

IN opening the budget on the 10th of June, Mr. Pitt remarked, that notwithstanding it

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

might be necessary for him, at the time he submitted to the committee an account of the national income and expenditure, to bring forward a large demand for the ensuing year, above the ordinary amount of what might have been expected as a peace establishment, and to have recourse to extraordinary means for providing for that demand, yet he had no doubt, that a fair review of the revenue, and of the circumstances which had occasioned this call upon the public purse, would confirm all that he had ever asserted of the improving state of the country; and instead of weakening, would corroborate, the expectations, which had been held out to the house, three years ago, in the report of the finance committee. He then enumerated all the particulars of the supply, which together amounted to 5,730,000*l.* exclusive of exchequer bills, renewed from year to year, but including 191,000*l.* lent to the Dutch government, to be repaid by instalments, with interest. The ways and means, by which this sum was proposed to be raised, were, the land and malt taxes taken at 2,750,000*l.*, the growing produce of the consolidated fund estimated at 1,530,000*l.*, the profits of a lottery 271,000*l.*, a loan of one million, and 187,000*l.* to be raised by short annuities, making together 5,738,000*l.* That

no permanent addition might be made to the national debt, he proposed to borrow the million by a tontine, or life annuities with benefit of survivorship, which would of course in time cease; and he intended to annex this condition, which was obviously favorable to the public, that more than 1,000*l.* a year should never be received for a subscription of 100*l.** Besides these tontine annuities, which he calculated at about 44,750*l.*, he had to provide for the defalcation in the revenue, caused by the repeal of the shop tax, which in the last year had produced 56,000*l.* These two sums together amounted to rather more than 100,000*l.*†; which he proposed to raise, not by taxing any new commodity, but by small additions to the existing taxes upon newspapers, advertisements, cards, dice, probates of wills,

CHAP.
XL
1789.

* This condition was to guard against extreme old age in any one of the lives; and the propriety of it was evident from what happened in France, with respect to a tontine established by Louis the 14th: A woman, who lived to the age of 96, in the last year of her life, received 3,600*l.* for an original subscription of only 30*l.*

† It was not necessary to provide for the short annuities, which were to last only $18\frac{3}{4}$ years, and would not amount to 14,000*l.* as that charge would be answered by the payments from the Dutch government. The subscribers to these annuities were to receive 7*l.* 9*s.* 9*d.* a year for every 100*l.* which Mr. Pitt stated to be a very good bargain for the public.

legacies to collateral relations, carriages, and horses, none of which would, he conceived, press upon the poor, or necessarily even upon persons of narrow income.

Having explained the services of the current year, and his intention to provide for them, by a mode which contained in it the principle of self-reduction, without burdening the sinking fund, he took a general view of the present state of the revenue.

The produce of the taxes, in 1788, had fallen short of their produce in 1787, by 300,000*l.* which was accounted for by the great exportation in 1787, in consequence of the suspension of trade in 1786, while the commercial treaty with France was depending, and by considerable balances accidentally remaining due from the assessed taxes of last year. The average produce of these two years was 15,578,000*l.* which exceeded the estimate of the finance committee, by nearly 100,000*l.* From 1786 there had been no loan, till the present year, and it was now proposed to borrow a million, to which was to be added an increase in the navy debt, of about 500,000*l.*; but on the other hand, within the same period, unforeseen expences, the particulars of which he enumerated, to an equal or rather greater amount than those two

sums, had arisen, and been defrayed out of the consolidated fund. Had not, therefore, these expences taken place, no loan would have been necessary, and the additional navy debt would not have been incurred; nor would any substitute for the shop tax have been required. Under these circumstances, he might congratulate himself and the country, that the hopes, which he had entertained, were well founded; and that the calculations of the committee had been verified to a degree of accuracy scarcely to be expected.

CHAP.
XL.
1789.

After obversations from several members, 18 resolutions, moved by Mr. Pitt, were agreed to; and the bills founded upon them passed both houses.

THE only other financial measure of importance, brought forward by Mr. Pitt, in the present session, was, an alteration in the mode of collecting the tax upon tobacco. The article of tobacco was, he said, a considerable object of revenue; but as the duty was now paid, the frauds committed upon it were so great, that, since the regulations with regard to tea, wines, and spirits, had taken place, it might justly be denominated the staple of smuggling. The very large amount of duty upon the article, when compared with its

CHAP. original cost*, held out a strong temptation
 XL to the smuggler; and the following statement
 1789. would shew, that in fact it was carried on
 to an extent, which operated very materially
 to the detriment of the revenue, and to the
 equal injury of the fair trader. According
 to the lowest computation, 12 millions of
 pounds of tobacco were annually consumed in
 this kingdom; and the average of the legal
 importation being only seven millions, it fol-
 lowed that five millions were smuggled, which
 caused a loss to the revenue of nearly 300,000*l.*
 a year. Under these circumstances, Mr. Pitt
 said, he thought it incumbent upon him to
 propose, as the most probable means of putting
 an end to this contraband and mischievous
 traffic, that the greater part of the duty should
 be transferred from the customs to the excise,
 and of course that the manufacturers of to-
 bacco should be subjected to the survey of the
 exciseman.

Anticipating the opposition which might
 be made to this measure, by the dealers in
 tobacco, he reminded the house, that when
 the alteration of the duties upon wine was
 under consideration of parliament, the wine
 merchants had roundly and confidently de-

* The duty was 14*d.* and the original cost 2*d.* or 3*d.*
 a pound.

clared at the bar, that it would be impossible for the trade to be carried on under the excise survey. The house, however, not giving implicit credit to these assertions, tried the experiment, and the result has been, that the trade has considerably increased.

CHAP.
XI.
1789.

Mr. Pitt moved 25 resolutions, all of which passed without any observation; and, a few days afterwards, he presented a bill founded on them.

The manufacturers, and others, concerned in the tobacco trade, presented petitions against the bill; and several members of the house expressed their disapprobation of this extension of the excise system. The principal objections of the former, were obviated by modifications introduced in the committee; and the general objection of the latter was answered, by observing, that the proposed measure would put only a small additional number of persons under the excise *, a system which had been resorted to upon numerous successive occasions, in the best periods of our history, and which had now existed for a long series of years, without the smallest injury to our liberty, or the constitution, and

* Most of the dealers in tobacco were already under the excise, on account of other articles in which they dealt.

CHAP. without any public inconvenience. The bill
 XI.
 1789. passed both houses.

ON the 27th of April, major Scott presented a petition to the house of commons from Mr. Hastings, complaining, that the managers, in carrying on the impeachment against him before the house of lords, had, in their speeches last year, introduced a variety of matter wholly unconnected with the charges, and containing allegations, which he recited, of a far more criminal nature.—That, as a more recent instance, Mr. Burke, in opening the charge relative to presents, on the 21st of this month, had expressly asserted, that Mr. Hastings had murdered Nundcomar by the hands of sir Elijah Impey; that the managers, and Mr. Burke in particular, had repeatedly declared, that they spoke by instructions from that house whose representatives they were, and that they should affirm nothing which they were not able and willing to prove; and, therefore, Mr. Hastings, appealing to the justice of the house, prayed, that the said accusation might be formed into specific articles, in order to give him an opportunity of vindicating his innocence; or that such other redress might be afforded him, as to the house should seem meet.

This petition gave rise to several debates, in which both the professed friends and enemies of Mr. Hastings, spoke with great heat and violence. Major Scott asserted, that Mr. Burke had been guilty of cool, deliberate, systematic, and intentional misrepresentation, in imputing to Mr. Hastings the most atrocious crimes, of which he (Mr. Burke) knew him to be innocent; and, in return, Mr. Burke said, that Major Scott was a libeller of the house of commons, from which he ought to have been expelled long since, and that no credit was due to his assertions. The speaker was repeatedly under the necessity of interposing, to put a stop to these and similar personalities.

CHAP.
 XI.
 1789.

It was urged in argument against this petition, that it would have a very bad tendency, if an accused person were allowed to arraign the conduct of his prosecutors, and in his turn become an accuser; that, to listen to an application of this kind, would be inconsistent with the confidence reposed by the house in the managers; and farther, that it would weaken the authority of the house in the exercise of its inquisitorial rights. It was also asserted, that the real object of the petition, and of the personal reproaches with which it was accompanied, was to discredit and dis-

CHAP.

XL.

1789.

gust the managers, so as to cause them to abandon the prosecution; and it was insinuated, that every one who favored Mr. Hastings upon this occasion, would expose himself to the suspicion of acting from the same motive.

On the other hand, Mr. Pitt contended, that it was utterly unjustifiable in the managers to bring forward accusations against Mr. Hastings, not contained in the articles of impeachment, and which therefore they could have no direction from the house to state, especially if the unauthorized accusations, as in the present case, implied more heinous criminality than the charges themselves; that the house did not mean Mr. Hastings should be accused of murder, because they had voted that he should be impeached of bribery and peculation; that the charges were definite, and that the managers were bound to confine themselves to substantiate the facts to which they referred, without digressing into extraneous and irrelevant subjects, merely for the purpose of prejudicing the court, and injuring the character of the accused; that some circumstances might with propriety be dwelt upon, as matters of aggravation, but that it was contrary to common sense, and to the practice of all criminal courts, to allow felony to be men-

tioned as an aggravation of misdemeanor; that if the accused person were really suspected of murder, or of any other felony, it ought to be made a substantive charge, and not urged incidentally and collaterally, when he was under trial for a different offence; that there was no reason, why an accused person should be debarred of the right, which was common to every subject of the realm, of submitting to the consideration of that house any grievance, under which he conceived himself to labor, and which the house had the means of redressing; that though the house had confided the prosecution to the managers, yet they had not given them absolute and unlimited powers; and that there must be cases, in which it would be proper to inquire into their conduct. He thought, however, that the house ought not to take cognizance of words spoken by the managers in the last session, as Mr. Hastings, if he had considered himself aggrieved by any expressions then used, should have applied to the house for its protection, long before this time: he was therefore of opinion, that the inquiry should be confined to Mr. Burke's allegation a few days since, of which Mr. Hastings had taken the earliest opportunity to complain, namely, that Mr. Hastings had murdered

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

CHAP. Nundcomar by the hands of sir Elijah Impey.

XI.

1789.

Upon this subject, it was, he said, to be recollected, that the house had, after a full investigation, refused to impeach sir Elijah Impey, who was said to have been the principal in the murder, as it was denominated by Mr. Burke, which was a strong presumption, that they would not have consented to make this an article of impeachment against Mr. Hastings as an accomplice; the house having deliberately declared, that there was no ground for a criminal accusation against the judge, who had presided at the trial and pronounced the sentence in question, surely they could not have considered any guilt to be attached to the person, under whose influence he was supposed to have acted, but of which no proof had been adduced. Upon the whole, the words appeared to him highly unbecoming, and demanding the censure of the house, which, however, he did not wish to go farther than was necessary for the purpose of doing that justice to Mr. Hastings, to which he thought him, although deservedly under prosecution, fully entitled, and of preventing similar improprieties in future. He concluded one of his speeches upon this subject, by observing, that as on the one hand, he would give to the managers every fair and honorable

support, so on the other, there was no species of insinuation, suspicion, or clamor, which should ever make him refuse to the criminal, that fairness of trial, and that consideration of any cruelties or hardships in his case, which were due to him on sound principles of equity and impartial justice ; hoping to shew himself throughout, both zealous in prosecuting one, whom he thought a public delinquent, and at the same time equally zealous for the honor and character of the house of commons. It was not difficult, he trusted, to unite these two principles ; for he verily believed, that there were no better means of forwarding the success of the prosecution, than by discountenancing every thing unfair, and by testifying to the world the goodness of their cause, by the rectitude of their proceedings.

As a termination to this dispute, which had occupied four days, and in which several preliminary questions had been discussed, lord Graham, one of the lords of the treasury, moved, “ That no direction or authority was given by this house to the committee appointed to manage the impeachment against Warren Hastings esq. to make any charge or allegation against the said Warren Hastings esq. respecting the condemnation or execution of Nundcomar ; and that the words of the right

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

CHAP.
XI.
1789.

honorable Edmund Burke, one of the said managers, viz. 'he (meaning Warren Hastings esq.) murdered that man (meaning Nundcomar) by the hands of sir Elijah Impey,' ought not to have been spoken." This motion, supported by Mr. Pitt, and eagerly opposed by Mr. Fox, and the other managers, was carried by a majority of 155 to 66. This division is a proof that the house strongly disapproved that rancorous violence, with which the managers carried on the prosecution against Mr. Hastings.

MR. BEAUFOY, on the 8th of May, repeated his motion for the repeal of the corporation and test acts; and Mr. Pitt opposed it on the same grounds as in the year 1787. In reply to Mr. Fox, who had asserted, that it was unjust to infer the future conduct of men, from the speculative opinions they entertained, he said, that government had a right to prevent any civil inconvenience, which such opinions were likely to produce, without waiting, till by their being carried into action, the inconvenience had actually been experienced. He considered the established church as a part of the constitution of the country, and the acts in question as justifiable on the principle of self-defence. They had now existed for above

a century, and had ever been looked upon as the props and bulwarks of the constitution. He spoke of the great quiet which obtained at present, relative to religious differences; and said, that if any thing could interrupt the harmony and moderation which subsisted between sects, once contending with great virulence and asperity, it would be by awakening a competition, and rekindling the sparks of antient animosity, which mutual forbearance had almost extinguished. The motion was negatived by a majority of only 20, the numbers being 122 and 102.

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

THE report of the committee of privy council appointed to inquire into the circumstances of the slave trade, which had been promised by Mr. Pitt in the last session, was presented by him on the 25th of April; and, on the 12th of May, Mr. Wilberforce brought the subject before the house of commons, in a most eloquent and impressive speech, in which he entered very fully into the inhumanity and impolicy of that disgraceful and infamous traffic. He began by avowing, that the end of what he intended to propose, was, the total abolition of the slave trade. He should not, he said, appeal to the passions of the house, but to their cool and impartial reason; he

CHAP.
 XI.
 1789.

wished gentlemen to deliberate, point by point, upon every part of the question; he took shame to himself, in common with the whole parliament of Great Britain, for having suffered this horrid trade to be carried on under their authority.

He proceeded to state, that it appeared from the report of the privy council, that the kings of Africa were never compelled to war, as far as could be ascertained, by public principles, or by national glory, and still less by the love of their people, but by avarice and sensuality;—upon these vices the slave trade depended for its maintenance. Does the king of Barbessin want brandy? He has only to send his troops in the night to burn and desolate a village, and the captives will serve as commodities to be bartered with the British trader. He mentioned an instance of two towns, formerly hostile to each other, which had settled their differences, and by intermarriages between the families of their chiefs, had pledged themselves to peace: but the trade in slaves was prejudiced by such a pacification; and it became, therefore, the interest of our traders, that hostilities should be renewed. This their policy was soon put in practice; and for the scene of treachery and violence which followed, he would refer gentlemen to the report, to

which he had before alluded. Most of the persons who had given evidence before the council, admitted that the slave trade was the chief cause of wars in Africa; and it was to be remembered, that this was proved by witnesses, who had seen the battles, who had been told by the kings themselves, that it was for the sake of slaves they went to war, and who had conversed with a variety of prisoners, taken by these means. Some of these prisoners were brought from immense distances, and were transferred like cattle from hand to hand, till they reached the coast, where they were sold for the cultivation of our West Indian colonies. It was, indeed, established by the most abundant testimony, that the slave trade had the effect, in Africa, of carrying misery, devastation, and ruin, wherever its baneful influence extended.

CHAP.
XI.
1789.

Mr. Wilberforce next spoke of the conveyance of the slaves to the West Indies, which he considered as the most wretched part of the whole subject. So much misery condensed in so little space, was more than the human imagination had ever before conceived. He called upon his hearers to picture to themselves, six or seven hundred of these victims in the same vessel, chained two and two, fed upon horse beans with a scanty allowance of water,

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

surrounded with every object which was nauseous and disgusting, diseased and struggling with all the varieties of wretchedness, and stowed so close together, that the surgeons had declared there was no room to tread between them. "Upon this point, I will," said Mr. Wilberforce, "call the attention of the house to one species of testimony, which is absolutely infallible. Death at least is a sure ground of evidence, and the proportion of deaths will not only confirm, but, if possible, will even aggravate our suspicion of the misery of the slaves in the transit. It will be found, upon an average of all the ships, of which an account has been given at the privy council, that exclusive of those who perish before they sail, not less than twelve and a half out of every hundred perish in the passage. Besides these, the Jamaica report tells you, that not less than four and a half out of every hundred die on shore before the day of sale, which is only a week or two from the time of landing. One third more die in the seasoning, and from the effect of diseases contracted on shipboard. All these causes produced a mortality of about fifty out of every hundred; and this among negroes, who are not bought, unless quite healthy at first, and unless, as the phrase is with cattle, they are "sound in wind and limb."

Mr. Wilberforce added, that as soon as he had advanced thus far in his investigation, he felt the wickedness of the slave trade to be so enormous, so dreadful, and so irremediable, that he could stop at no alternative short of its abolition. A trade founded in iniquity, and carried on with such circumstances of horror, must be abolished, let its policy be what it might ; and he had from this time determined, whatever might be the consequences, that he would never rest, till he had effected that abolition. His mind had, indeed, been harassed with the objections of the West India planters, who had asserted, that such a measure must be followed by the absolute ruin of their property. He could not, however, help distrusting their arguments. He could not believe, that the Almighty Being, who forbade the practice of rapine and bloodshed, had made rapine and bloodshed necessary to the well-being of any part of his universe. He felt a confidence in that persuasion, and took the resolution to act upon it. Light, indeed, soon broke in upon him ; the suspicion of his mind was every day confirmed by increasing information ; and he was enabled to prove, by conclusive argument, and incontrovertible evidence, that the number of negroes in our colonies might be kept up, without the intro-

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

CHAP. XI. 1789. duction of recruits from Africa; and, consequently, that those who were interested in the property, or engaged in the commerce of the West Indies, had nothing to fear from the abolition of the slave trade.

He then shewed, that the mortality and want of increase among the slaves, proceeded from the hardships and cruelties which they suffered; and observed, that the abolition must be followed by milder treatment, as the only means of rendering them prolific, and of procuring a supply. He asserted, as a fact which could be established, that already several individuals, by good usage, and proper attention to the health, and morals, and diet of their slaves, had kept up their stock without any new purchases.

It was urged, he said, by the advocates of the slave trade, that it was now the interest of the traders and planters to treat their slaves with humanity and kindness; but he desired to remark, that it was immediate and present, not future and distant interest, which was the great spring of action in the affairs of mankind. Why did we make laws to punish men? It was their interest to be upright and virtuous. But there was a present impulse, continually breaking in upon their better judgment; an impulse, which was known to

be contrary to their permanent advantage. [CHAP. XL.
1789.
It was ridiculous to say, that men would be bound by their interest, when under the influence of instant gain or ardent passion. In some respects self-interest and humanity will go together ; but unhappily, through the whole progress of the slave trade, the very converse of that principle was continually occurring.

Mr. Wilberforce adverted to other objections, which had been made to this proposal : It was absurd, he said, to suppose, that Liverpool would be ruined by the abolition, or that it would feel the difference very sensibly, since only 1-15th of the whole outward-bound tonnage of that port was engaged in the slave trade ; and indeed he was inclined to think, that in the aggregate the slave trade was a losing trade, although large fortunes were occasionally made by it : it was a sort of lottery, kept alive by the spirit of speculation and adventure. Our fisheries, and other trading concerns, would furnish so many innocent and bloodless ways of employing our shipping now used in the slave trade, that no mischief was to be feared on that account.

As to our marine, it was certain, that the slave trade, instead of being a nursery for our sailors, was in reality their grave. A com-

CHAP. XL
 1789. parison had with great industry and care been formed between the muster rolls of the slave ships, and those of the vessels employed in the other branches of our commerce ; and it had been found, that more sailors died in one year in the slave trade, than in two years in all our other trades put together. Of 3,170 seamen, who had sailed from Liverpool to Africa in 1787, only 1,428 had returned.

Another objection was, that if we relinquished the slave trade, it would be taken up by the French : we should become the sufferers, and the evil would remain in its utmost extent. This was indeed a very weak and sophistical argument ; and if it would defend the slave trade, it might equally be urged in favor of robbery, murder, and every species of wickedness, which, if we did not practise, others would probably commit. He did not, however, believe, that there was any foundation for this objection, as both the French king and his minister had lately declared their abhorrence of the slave trade.

“ I believe,” said Mr. Wilberforce, at the conclusion of his speech, “ I have now touched upon all the objections of any consequence, which are made to the abolition of the slave trade. When we consider the vastness of the continent of Africa ; when we reflect, that all

other countries have for some centuries been advancing in happiness and civilization ; when we recollect, that in this same period, all improvement in Africa has been defeated by her intercourse with Britain ; when we reflect, that it is we ourselves who have degraded her inhabitants to that wretched brutishness and barbarity, which we now plead as the justification of our guilt ; that the slave trade has enslaved their minds, blackened their character, and sunk them to a scale scarcely above irrational beings, what mortification must we feel at having so long neglected to think of our criminality, or to attempt any reparation ? Let us then make such amends as we can, for the mischief we have done to that unhappy continent. Let us put an end at once to this inhuman traffic. Let us stop this effusion of human blood. The true way to virtue is, by avoiding temptation : let us therefore withdraw from these wretched Africans, those temptations to fraud, violence, cruelty, and injustice, which the slave trade furnishes. Wherever the sun shines, let us go round the world with him, diffusing our beneficence ; but let us not traffic, only that we may set kings against their subjects, and subjects against their kings ; sowing discord in every village, fear and terror in every family, setting

CHAP.

XL.

1789.

CHAP.

XL

1789.

millions of our fellow-creatures to hunt each other for slaves, creating fairs and markets for human flesh, through one whole continent of the world; and, under the name of policy, concealing from ourselves all the baseness and iniquity of such a traffic.

“The nature, and all the circumstances of this trade, are now laid open to us; we can no longer plead ignorance; we cannot evade it; it is now an object placed before us; we cannot pass it; we may spurn it, we may kick it out of the way; but we cannot turn aside, so as to avoid seeing it: for it is brought now so directly before our eyes, that this house must decide; and must justify to all the world, and to their own consciences, the rectitude of the grounds and principles of their decision.”

Mr. Wilberforce moved twelve resolutions, stating the number of slaves annually carried from Africa, and the number imported into the British West Indies; the causes of slavery in Africa; the effects of the slave trade upon its inhabitants; the practicability of establishing an extensive and valuable commerce of a different kind with that continent; the mortality of the British seamen employed in the slave trade; the mortality of the negroes, both in the middle passage, and in the West

Indies; the causes which have impeded the natural increase of population among the slaves in the islands; the diminution of deaths since the slaves were better treated: And the last resolution concluded with this sentence, as an inference from several of the preceding ones, “it appears that no considerable or permanent inconvenience would result from discontinuing the farther importation of African slaves.”

CHAP.
XI.
 1789.

He said, that he did not wish the house to decide upon the resolutions that night, but should consider the debate as adjourned to some day in the following week.

Mr. Burke declared, that, in his opinion, not merely the British nation, but all Europe, was under very great and serious obligation to Mr. Wilberforce, for exposing the iniquity of a trade, “begun with savage war, prosecuted with unheard of cruelty, continued during the middle passage with the most loathsome imprisonment, and ending in perpetual exile and unremitting slavery.”

Mr. Pitt expressed the warmest approbation of the sentiments of his honorable friend, and returned him his sincere thanks, for the manner in which he had brought the subject before the house, not merely in regard to the masterly, forcible, and perspicuous method of argu-

CHAP.
 XI.
 1789.

ment, which he had pursued respecting it, but particularly, for having chosen the only way in which it could be made obvious to the world, that they were warranted on every ground of fact and of reason, in coming to that vote, which he hoped would be the end of their proceedings. As to the mode by which the abolition of the slave trade was to be carried into effect, they were not at present called upon to discuss it ; but, he trusted, it would not be found the means of inviting foreign powers to supply our islands with slaves, by a clandestine trade. When once the house shall be convinced, that the trade ought to be abolished, they would not be deterred by any fears of other nations being tempted by the profit resulting from a commerce, which, upon the grounds of humanity and national honor, they had relinquished, to carry it on in an illicit manner. Should that be the case, the language must be, that Great Britain had resources to enable her to protect her islands, and prevent that traffic being clandestinely carried on with them, which she had thought fit, for her own credit and character, to abandon. It was their duty, and it should be their ambition, to take the lead in a business of such extensive importance, and of so much national credit ; and foreign nations

might be prevailed upon to concur with them, either by negotiation immediately to be commenced, or by the effect which the propositions being put upon the journals would, in all probability, produce.

CHAP.
XI.
1789.

Mr. Fox applauded Mr. Wilberforce for professing to do, what certainly ought to be done, to completely abolish the traffic in slaves, a traffic, for continuing which, no plea of policy or of necessity could be urged. With regard to a regulation of the slave trade, his detestation of its existence must naturally lead him to remark, that he knew not of such a thing as a regulation of robbery, or a restriction of murder. He had risen, he said, principally to notice what had fallen from the right honorable gentleman (Mr. Pitt,) respecting the probability of foreign nations taking up the trade, on our abandoning it, and clandestinely supplying our West Indian islands with slaves. He had intended to say the same thing, because he was convinced, that it was the fit tone to be holden upon such a subject; and that foreign nations should be given to understand, that when this country thought proper to abolish the slave trade, we possessed the means of preventing that trade being carried on in any manner with our colonies. A trade in human flesh was so revolting, that

CHAP.
XI.

1789.

it was in the last degree infamous to suffer it to exist, under the authority of the government of any country. He thought it, however, likely, that the great and enlightened nation of France, our grand political rival, would catch a spark from the light of our fire, and run a race with us in promoting the ends of humanity.

Though the two leaders of the political parties, into which the house of commons was divided, were thus decidedly favorable to the abolition of the slave trade, other members expressed a very different opinion; and it was evident from what passed on this, and also on a following day, when the subject was renewed, that the measure would meet with a most serious opposition. Petitions had likewise been presented, both in this and in the last session, against the abolition, not only by those who were immediately engaged in the trade itself, and in the manufacture of goods for which slaves were exchanged, but by the West Indian merchants and planters, a numerous and powerful body, with very extensive connexions; and there was perhaps at this time scarcely an individual, concerned in the commerce, or interested in the produce, of our sugar colonies, who was not persuaded, that he should suffer materially by the success

of Mr. Wilberforce's proposal. Immense, indeed, was the private property in these islands, belonging chiefly to persons resident in this kingdom, many of whom were members of the houses of parliament; and besides the actual owners of these valuable possessions, there was a long list of mortgagees, annuitants, and creditors *, who were all taught to believe, that their securities would be deteriorated by the abolition of the slave trade. However unfounded these widely-spread prejudices and fears might be, and however little attention pecuniary considerations deserved, when opposed by the essential principles of humanity and justice, the friends of the abolition had to contend against the most strenuous exertions of this formidable combination of persons, who besides maintaining that the statement of Mr. Wilberforce was in all its parts highly exaggerated, and that the real evils attending the slave trade might be removed or greatly mitigated by suitable regulations, to which they should willingly consent, urged the plausible pleas of long-established practice, the express sanction of

CHAP.
 XI.
 1789.

* Mr. Edwards estimated the whole value of British capital in West Indian property, at 70 millions sterling.—The average value of the annual imports into Great Britain from the West Indies, was estimated at 6,500,000*l*.

CHAP. the British legislature, the loss of commerce
 XI. to the nation, and the danger and injury of
 1789. a compulsory introduction of a new system in
 the management of private property.

Several members contended, that in a question of this importance, and concerning which such contradictory sentiments prevailed, it would be very improper to rely wholly upon the report of the privy council; and that the house ought to have an opportunity of forming their judgment, from evidence adduced at their own bar. Mr. Pitt, who had from the first declared his readiness to accede to any proposal for farther information, thought this a reasonable expectation; and, accordingly, it was agreed, after some discussion, but without a division, that previously to any other step, counsel should be heard and witnesses examined, in a committee of the whole house, in support, and in compliance with the prayer, of the various petitions which had been presented on both sides. The committee sat from the 27th of May, on every vacant day, till the 23d of June *, when so little progress was made, that a decision was manifestly impossible before the prorogation; and, there-

* From the intervention of Whitsuntide holidays, and the variety of business now depending in the house of commons, the committee sat only seven days in this interval,

fore, the two parties consented, that the farther consideration of the business should be deferred till the next session.

CHAP.
XI.
1789.

The postponement of the main question induced sir William Dolben to bring in a bill to continue the act of last year, for regulating the transportation of slaves from Africa to the West Indies; which was the more necessary, as the mortality in the middle passage had been proved, by the evidence taken before the privy council, to be considerably greater than he had stated the preceding year, in the house of commons. The new act, which contained some amendments, was to remain in force till August the 1st, 1790; and it passed without any difficulty.

ON the 1st of July, the East India company presented a petition to the house of commons, praying to be permitted to increase their capital by one million, to be subscribed by the present proprietors of East India stock. The grounds of this application were, the great expences incurred in the late war, and a transfer of a considerable part of the company's debt in India to England. A bill was introduced for the purpose desired, which was supported by ministers, and passed both houses, after a slight opposition.

CHAP.

XI.

1789.

THOUGH his majesty continued free from any return of mental indisposition, yet his constitution had received so severe a shock, that he recovered his health and strength very slowly *; and it was thought more prudent, that he should not go in person to put an end to the session. Parliament was therefore prorogued by commission, on the 11th of August; and, upon that occasion, the lord chancellor informed the two houses, that he was commanded by the king to return them his majesty's thanks, for their uniform attention to the public business; and to assure them of the satisfaction he felt from the situation of affairs abroad, which promised to this country the uninterrupted enjoyment of the blessings of peace.

* In his letters to Mr. Pitt, during the session of parliament, he frequently complained of not being well; and it appears that Dr. Willis and his son occasionally visited the king, both at Kew and at Windsor, in April, May, and June, which was not owing to any actual return of the mental disorder, but because they were thought the best judges of the system which ought to be pursued for the entire removal of the effects produced upon his majesty's general health, by his long illness, and perhaps for the prevention of a relapse.

CHAPTER THE TWELFTH:

1789:

French Revolution—Meeting of Parliament—Mt. Pitt's Finance Measures—Other Proceedings in this Session—Different Sentiments expressed by the leading Members of Opposition, relative to the French Revolution—Prorogation and Dissolution of Parliament—Convention with Spain—Proceedings in France—Hostilities in India.

THE revolution, which, at this period, took place in the government of France, had so much influence upon the public measures of Mr. Pitt, in the latter part of his administration, that it will be indispensably necessary to give a brief statement of the leading circumstances which produced that extraordinary event, and of the principal occurrences by which it was accompanied.

Whatever doubts may have been entertained or professed respecting the primary cause of the French revolution, while the eager contention it excited, blinded the judgment, and prevented calm investigation, a general opinion now prevails, that it originated with a set of men, united for purposes, of which there

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

is no example in the history of mankind. Few of the present day will hesitate to acknowledge, that this scourge of the civilized world may be traced to the secret machinations, and licentious and impious publications, of Voltaire, Rousseau, D'Alembert, and the other founders of what has been denominated the new philosophy, the grand characteristic of which is, hostility to all established forms both of civil polity and religious worship, to every thing hitherto held virtuous or sacred among mankind, or considered as conducive to their best interests*. The writings of these men contained tenets of the most profligate and dangerous nature in religion, morality, and government; and being calculated to mislead and corrupt readers of every description, gradually effected a most material change, not only in the sentiments of literary and speculative persons, but in the tide of general opinion. This system, which had been carried on for many years, with incredible industry and exertion, was, in some degree, promoted by the equally unwise and unjustifiable policy of the court of France, in sending both military men of distinguished talents, and nume-

* Some who will not allow, that what is here stated can properly be called the actual origin of the French revolution, admit, that it was a strong predisposing cause.

rous other emissaries, to foment and aid the discontent and disturbances in the British colonies of America, where they imbibed republican notions, which, after the establishment of peace, they maintained and disseminated in their native country; and it was unfortunately still more assisted by the real abuses existing in the French government, and by the gross corruptions of the national religion, which, when exposed with all the force both of serious argument and poignant ridicule, generated an aversion to every species of regal power, and a disbelief of the whole of revelation. The minds of men being thus prepared to engage in any scheme, which might tend to the subversion of monarchy, and to the extinction of christianity, the embarrassed state of the French finances, and the impolitic conduct of the king's ministers, afforded an opportunity of bringing into action those principles, which have produced the most bitter fruits, and have scattered seeds of infidelity, anarchy, and misery, which, it is to be feared, will not soon be eradicated from the world.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

The public debt of France was very large, and her revenue by no means in a flourishing condition, at the time she commenced hostilities with this country in 1778; and the expen-

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

ces of that war, by adding considerably to her debt*, involved her in great pecuniary difficulties. M. de Calonne was appointed comptroller general of the finances, towards the end of 1783; and, though it was then time of profound peace, and though he immediately introduced a variety of regulations for the improvement of the revenue, and the diminution of the expenditure, he was under the necessity of having recourse to loans in that and in the two following years. The loan of 1785 amounted to between three and four millions sterling, and the parliament of Paris, upon being required by the king to register the edict for raising that sum, repeatedly remonstrated against it, in terms very different from any language which they or their predecessors had ever addressed to their sovereign. At length, his majesty peremptorily commanded them to obey, without farther hesitation, and the edict was registered; but it was accompanied with a resolution, reflecting so offensively upon the measures of government, that the king ordered it to be expunged from their journals, with a severe reprimand for presuming to express an opinion upon subjects, in which they had no right to interfere.

* It was said that this war added about fifty millions sterling to the national debt of France.

The difficulties attending this transaction, and the temper and disposition exhibited by the parliament of Paris, convinced M. de Calonne, that something more than the ordinary authority of the king and his ministers, would be requisite for the establishment of those radical reforms in the system of finance, without which it would be in vain to expect, that the income of the country could ever be made equal to its current expences, and to the interest of the national debt.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

France, like the other feudal kingdoms of Europe, had originally its states general, in whom was vested the legislative power, and without whose concurrence no subsidy could be levied. In process of time, the kings of France, by successive encroachments on the liberties of the people and the privileges of the barons, and by maintaining a large military force, acquired absolute power; and ceasing to call together the states general, exercised, in their sole capacity, the right of making laws, whether relating to taxation, or to any other public concern, which were sent to the Parliament of Paris, to be registered, merely for the purpose of giving them authentic promulgation, before they were put in force.

The parliament of Paris, totally differing from that of England, was, by its original con-

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

stitution a court of justice only ; and several of the provinces, having been separate principalities before they were united to the crown of France, had each its own parliament, which was confined to a similar jurisdiction. The members of these parliaments were at first appointed and removed at the pleasure of the king ; but the seats, from the distress or the corruption of government, being afterwards sold, were understood to be granted for life, as it would have been extremely unjust arbitrarily to dismiss a person from a situation, which he had purchased. For a considerable period, the parliaments registered the laws, or royal edicts, without inquiry or observation ; but when they looked upon themselves as in a great measure independent of the crown, in consequence of holding their places for life, they assumed to themselves a right of judging of the propriety or expediency of the edicts. If parliament considered, that any edict would be injurious to the public, they declined to register it ; stating their objections, and pretending, by a sort of legal fiction, and out of respect for royal authority, that it could not be the real act of the king, but was a mere imposition of his ministers. In weak administrations, or under other favorable circumstances, this opposition was frequently suc-

cessful, and the edict was given up by the court. But if the governing power was firm and determined, the parliament submitted, or the king had recourse to what was called a bed of justice ; that is, he went in person, having given previous notice of his intention, attended by the great officers of state, to authenticate and confirm his own deed before the parliament ; and as all debate was precluded by his presence, he had nothing farther to do, than to order the edict to be registered, which was instantly done ; and it became the undisputed law of the land.

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

The parliament, being the only check to the arbitrary power of the monarch, stood high in the public estimation ; and gradually advancing in weight and authority, at length ventured to interfere in the religious disputes, which prevailed in France, under the reign of Louis the fifteenth ; and even refused to register several of his money edicts. After various contests and altercations, the king, towards the close of his life, banished the parliament of Paris, and likewise several provincial parliaments, who had displeased him by the same refractory conduct. Louis the sixteenth, upon his accession to the throne in 1774, restored all the banished parliaments, and experienced very little trouble or incon-

CHAP. XII. 1789. venience from them, till the parliament of Paris shewed a reluctance to register the edict for the loan of 1785, in the manner which has been related; and we shall see, that the resistance of this and of the other parliaments to the authority of the king, aided by the feeble and imprudent conduct on the part of government, contributed, in no small degree, to those scenes of turbulence and confusion which soon afterwards followed.

It had been the practice in former times, though not a frequent one, for the kings of France, upon great emergencies, and when the states general were not sitting, to call together a certain number of their subjects, distinguished by rank and character, who were, therefore, when thus assembled, known by the name of the notables*. This convention possessed no legislative power; they were only a temporary council of state, whose office it was to deliver their sentiments upon any plans communicated to them, by command of the king, and to offer to his majesty such advice as the public welfare might appear to them to demand. No meeting, however, of this kind, had been holden since the year 1626; but the present situation of the country

* The president Henault mentions only four meetings of the notables, namely, in 1558, 1596, 1617, and 1626.

induced M. de Calonne to recommend to his majesty to call an assembly of the notables, with the hope of obtaining their sanction to the projects, which he had in contemplation. Accordingly, on the 29th of December 1786, summonses were issued to 144 persons, seven of whom were princes of the blood, and the rest peers, nobles, heads of the church, law, and army, ministers of the crown, deputies of the pays d'états, and magistrates of the principal towns in different parts of the kingdom.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

The attention of all classes of the community was fixed upon this meeting; and, at Paris more especially, the probable result of its deliberations was the prevalent topic of conversation. The inhabitants of the metropolis now displayed a spirit of inquiry, and a freedom in discussing political subjects, hitherto unknown in that country. The unequal manner in which taxes were paid in the different provinces of the kingdom, the exemption of the clergy, nobles, and magistrates, from various species of taxation, the oppressive rigor with which taxes were collected from the middle and lower classes of society, and the excessive peculation and lavish waste of the public money, were loudly complained of as requiring immediate redress; and, it is unquestionably true, that these and other

CHAP. defects and abuses in the present government
 XII. gave great advantage to the disaffected and
 1789. ill-disposed, and procured for them, in the
 beginning of the struggle, the concurrence
 and support of many persons, who considered
 themselves as contending only for a moderate
 reform, and were not aware of the ultimate
 designs of those, under whose banners they
 had enlisted, and whose views they in fact
 unintentionally promoted.

After a formal opening of the assembly of
 the notables at Versailles, in a speech from
 the king, on the 22d of February, 1787,
 M. de Calonne entered into a long detail of
 the financial state of the country, which he
 represented to be embarrassed and distressed
 beyond the common remedy of additional
 taxes upon the present system : those classes
 of the community, he said, upon whom the
 weight of the public assessments principally
 fell, were already oppressed by burdens, which
 would admit of no increase ; and, although
 every practical retrenchment had been made,
 and all possible economy introduced, the ex-
 penditure of the nation exceeded its income
 by four millions sterling ; and he added, that at
 the present moment, there were the most press-
 ing demands upon the treasury, which it was
 utterly unable to satisfy. He then submitted

to the consideration of the assembly several measures, the two most material of which were, the establishment of a general and equal territorial impost or land-tax, in lieu of the partial one which then existed, and an equalization of the public burdens, by annihilating all exemptions, and by making every class and every individual of the community alike subject to the payment of taxes. These proposals seem to have been founded in reason and equity, and had they been approved and adopted, would probably have answered their intended purpose. But, unfortunately, the assembly of the notables was composed almost entirely of privileged persons, who would have suffered by these regulations, and who did not possess the public spirit to prefer the national welfare to their own private interest.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

The proposed measures were, on this account, extremely ill received by the notables; and from the same cause, when made public, they were severely reprobated by the numerous orders of the nobility, clergy, and magistrates*, throughout the kingdom, who, by their influence and misrepresentation,

* Patents of nobility were sold in France; and from this and other causes, the nobles were said at this time, to amount to 200,000. The clergy were about 130,000; and the magistrates also were extremely numerous.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

contrived to render them odious even to the bulk of the people, to whose relief they would unquestionably have contributed. So universal and violent a clamor was raised against the minister, that the king was induced to dismiss him from his office, early in April; and about a month afterwards, some temporary appointments intervening, the archbishop of Toulouse, who had been one of the most determined opponents of M. de Calonne, in the assembly of the notables, was placed at the head of the finances.

The notables continued to sit, and the proposal of a general and equal land-tax was repeatedly discussed. Besides the opposition of particular and individual interests, it was objected to as a direct infraction of the rights of whole provinces, and a violation of the original capitularies, which they had entered into with the crown, for the preservation of their antient immunities, and on the faith of which they became members of the kingdom. Upon this subject, the attorney general of Provence was bold enough to declare, that neither that assembly, nor the parliament, nor the king himself, could charge any such impost on the province to which he belonged, it being fundamentally contrary to the specific and indefeasible rights of the inhabitants.

Under these circumstances it became every day more evident, that no substantial benefit was to be expected from the deliberations of the notables; and it required not much political sagacity to discover, that nothing less than an assembly of the states general of the kingdom, acting upon a wise and comprehensive system, under the direction of a firm and able minister, and with the instructions and advice of the respective provincial states, particularly in those matters which related to their own peculiar rights and privileges, could extricate the country from its present distress, by permanent and duly authorized arrangements of the revenue.

The king dissolved the assembly of the notables on the 25th of May, and in his speech returned them thanks for their zeal and attention, in examining the objects which he had recommended to their consideration. In consequence of their suggestions, some useful, though not very important, regulations in the collection of the revenue were adopted; but as they had not afforded any effectual relief to the urgent necessities of the state, the ministers, unwilling, without absolute compulsion, to have recourse to a meeting of the states general, had no alternative left but to attempt to raise money by the usual mode. Several

CHAP.
XII.

royal edicts for that purpose were sent to the parliament of Paris, all of which were registered without much hesitation; except one, issued on the 12th of June, imposing a general stamp duty. Upon this subject the parliament presented an address to the king, containing objections to the tax, and requesting his majesty to communicate to them a full account of the real state of the finances, and of the manner in which the money demanded was to be applied. The king declared his determination not to furnish them with any explanatory documents relative to these points; and this refusal drew from the parliament a strong remonstrance, in which, after inveighing with great severity against the present ministers, they entered into a discussion of the principles and object of national imposts: they asserted, that neither the king, nor the parliaments, nor any other body of men, except the three estates of the kingdom collectively assembled, had a right to lay a permanent tax upon the people; and they therefore requested, that his majesty would be pleased to assemble the states general. The king replied, that it was for him to judge of the proper time of calling the states general together; and he again required them to register the stamp duty edict, and also an edict

for a general land-tax: But finding them resolved not to comply, he held, as the last resort, a bed of justice on the 6th of August, and in his presence, and by his authority, both the edicts were registered. Though this was conformable to antient practice, the parliament did not, like their predecessors, acquiesce in such an exercise of arbitrary power; but on the following day, entered a formal protest against the whole transaction, declaring, that the edicts which had been registered by the express command of the king, against their approbation and consent, neither ought to have, nor should have, any force; and that the first person who should attempt to carry them into execution, should be adjudged a traitor, and condemned to the galleys. This direct attack upon the authority of the king, in the important article of levying taxes, could not be overlooked; and the parliament was immediately* banished to Troyes in Champagne.

During these disputes, the people at Paris took a warm and decided part in favor of the parliament, whom they considered as victims to the cause of public liberty; and such was the disposition to riot, that the ministers thought it necessary to march a considerable number of additional troops into the city, to

* On August 12, 1787.

CHAP.
XII.

prevent disturbances. Besides patrols by day and night, subaltern officers, with small detachments of soldiers, were posted at the corners of the streets; the whole force employed in this service, amounting to 12,000 men. Nor was the dissatisfaction confined to the populace. The chamber of accounts, and court of aids, the two courts of justice next in rank to the parliament, protested against the new taxes, and petitioned the king to recal the parliament, and to summon the states general, as the only means of restoring public confidence and tranquillity, and of relieving the people from the oppressions under which they groaned. Several other public bodies concurred in the same application; and a general tendency to innovation, under the specious pretext of reform, now manifested itself among all descriptions of persons in the metropolis.

The provincial parliaments expressed their unqualified approbation of the conduct of the parliament of Paris; and not confining themselves to the subject of taxes, seemed to vie with each other in the boldness and violence of their proceedings. Among various instances of this nature, the parliament of Grenoble, the capital of Dauphiny, protested against the unconstitutional power, so long exercised by the crown, in issuing lettres de cachet; and

declared the execution of them within their jurisdiction, by any person, and under whatever authority, to be a capital crime. The general prevalence of this spirit of discontent and opposition so alarmed the ministers, that they did not venture to take any steps for enforcing either the stamp duty or land-tax edict ; but they reduced the expences of the king's household, and of some other departments, with the hope of recommending themselves to the people, and of lessening the pressure of pecuniary distress.

CHAP.
XII.

The exiled members of the parliament of Paris, although they could not hold any regular meetings, frequently conferred together ; and, in compliance with their unanimous wish, the first president, without any permission from the king, or previous notice, set out for Versailles ; and, arriving there on the 13th of September, represented to his majesty, in the name of the whole body, the ruinous situation to which his kingdom would be inevitably reduced, by a perseverance in those measures, which he had been advised to pursue : adding, that all public business was at a stand, and the nation in a great ferment ; and that though the precise consequences of such a state of things could not be foreseen, yet it was evident, that disorder, confusion, and per-

CHAP.
XII.

haps the most serious mischief, would be the result.

Although the president had no authority to leave the place of his banishment, and this address was rather menacing than conciliatory, yet so eager was the king for an accommodation, that he allowed a treaty to take place, and soon consented formally to give up the stamp duty and land-tax, which were the great objects of contention, and to recal the parliament. These concessions on the part of the court, without any corresponding ones from the parliament, marked the weakness and indecision of government, and could not but operate as an encouragement to future resistance; an opportunity for which shortly after occurred.

On the 19th of November, the king, attended by all the princes of the blood, the great officers of state, and peers, went to an assembly of the parliament of Paris, for the purpose of holding what was called a “*séance royale* *,” and carried with him two edicts to be regis-

* At a *séance royale* the measures were debated in the king's presence before they were registered. When the king held a bed of justice, no debate was allowed. It was observed upon this occasion, by the abbé Sabbatier, that the only difference between a bed of justice and a *séance royale*, was, that one had all the frankness of despotism, and the other all its hypocrisy.

tered; the one for a succession of loans for five years, amounting to about nineteen millions sterling, and the other for the re-establishment of the protestants in certain civil rights, of which they had been long deprived. The latter measure had been recommended by the parliament some time before, and was probably now proposed, with a view of procuring a better reception for the former. The king introduced these edicts with a speech, in which he explained the necessity of the loans, and expatiated upon the propriety of restoring the protestants to their antient privileges; and, concluding in a high tone of authority, very inconsistent with his recent unconditional concessions, he reminded the parliament, that it was their duty to confine themselves to the functions entrusted to them by the kings his predecessors, and to set an example of fidelity and obedience to his other subjects.

Every member being then at liberty to deliver his sentiments, a very warm debate took place relative to the loans, which lasted nine hours; and, at length, the king, fatigued, and probably displeased by the freedom with which some of the members had expressed themselves, suddenly commanded the edicts to be registered without farther delay. To this the duke of Orleans, first prince of the blood,

next to the king's brothers, objected, as a direct infringement of the rights of parliament ; and protested against all the proceedings of the day, as illegal. His majesty, however, repeated the order, and immediately quitted the assembly ; after which the parliament entered into a resolution, confirming the duke of Orleans's protest, and declaring the edicts null and void.

On the following day, the duke was banished to one of his own seats, where no person was to have access to him, except his family ; and the abbé Sabbatier and M. Freteau, two members of the parliament, who had violently opposed the edict for the loans, were seized by lettres de cachet, and sent to separate and distant prisons.

This transaction was followed by a series of remonstrances from the parliament to the king, and of answers from his majesty, in which were asserted and maintained, with the most marked perseverance, and in the most determined language, principles so opposite to each other, in regard to the prerogative and authority of the crown, the privileges of parliament, and the rights of the subject, that any compromise or reconciliation was manifestly impossible ; and it was obvious, that some great crisis was fast approaching. The parliament constantly referred to what they represented as the ori-

ginal constitution of the kingdom of France ; and the king supported his claims by the uninterrupted and unquestionable powers exercised by his immediate predecessors, for a considerable period of time. CHAP.
XII.

This contest lasted many months, during which the ministers were employed in framing an extensive plan for a new form of government, the main object of which was, to relieve the king from those vexatious disputes with the parliament, which had been the source of the present distracted state of affairs. With this view, it was proposed to establish a grand council of state, under the name of "La Cour Plenièrè," to be invested with such powers, as to reduce the parliaments to their original condition of mere courts of justice. This new court was to consist of princes of the blood, peers of the realm, great officers of the crown, the higher orders of the clergy, marshals of France, governors of provinces, knights of the different orders, and a deputation of one member from each parliament of the realm, and of two from the chambers of accounts and of aids, all of whom were to be appointed by the king, and to hold their offices for life. Whatever intrinsic merit this plan might possess, the state of France at the time afforded so little probability of its being

CHAP.
XII.

adopted, that the expectation of its terminating the present dissensions and restoring tranquillity, appears a species of infatuation ; and it is obvious, that every unsuccessful attempt to deprive the parliaments of their usurped authority, could not but tend to strengthen and confirm it.

The parliament of Paris obtained information of what was intended ; and before any formal notification of the plan was made to them, they passed several resolutions condemning its principal provisions ; in consequence of which, the king ordered M. d'Espremenil and M. de Mosambert, who had taken the leading part in the debate, to be arrested in their own houses. These two members, however, having received private intelligence of the order which had been given, concealed themselves ; but on the following day went to a meeting of the parliament, when the intended arrest was taken into consideration, and it was unanimously resolved, that a remonstrance should be presented to his majesty, upon the subject, by a deputation of their body. The king refused to admit the deputation ; and soon afterwards a regiment of soldiers surrounded the palace where the parliament was assembled, and their commander, M. Degout, entering, ordered, in the king's

name, that M. d'Espremenil and M. de Mosambert, should be delivered up to him. A profound silence ensued for some time; but at length the president rose and declared, that he, and every other person present, was a d'Espremenil and a Mosambert, for that they all entirely coincided in the sentiments of those members. M. Degout, not being able to execute his orders, retired for the purpose of consulting the king and his ministers; and, returning at the end of twenty hours, during which time the parliament remained locked up in their chamber, and surrounded by soldiers, required the members to point out to him M. d'Espremenil and M. de Mosambert, under the penalty of being declared guilty of high treason. Not a word was said in answer, till the two members in question rose, and desired permission to surrender themselves: they were accordingly taken into custody, and committed to prison.

The king held a bed of justice on the 8th of May, upon which occasion the parliament presented to his majesty, a long address, asserting, among other things, that the French nation would never adopt the despotic plan he had in contemplation; that his authority could only be esteemed, so long as it was tempered with justice; that the fundamental

CHAP.
XII.

laws of the kingdom must not be trampled upon ; that the parliament was determined, both as a body and as individuals, to take no part in any functions which might be the consequence of new regulations ; and that they would not assist in carrying into execution any measures, which were not the unanimous resolutions of parliament, endued with all its privileges.

After this address, the king explained very fully the new code of ordinances in a long speech, to which the members listened in silence ; and, without making any observation, they saw it registered by his majesty's command. But, on the following day, they entered a protest, declaring, that they gave their sanction to no part of the code, and that they could not accept any seat in the Cour Plenièrè, which his majesty wished to establish, and which they considered as destructive of the rights they had long enjoyed. This protest was immediately followed by a letter, addressed by several peers to the king, in which they lamented the attempt now made to subvert the fundamental principles of the government, and informed his majesty, that their sense of duty to their country would not allow them to engage in the functions assigned them by the new edicts ; and similar sentiments were soon

afterwards expressed by a more numerous body of nobles and bishops, in an address presented to his majesty. The king, however, proceeded to nominate the members of the Cour Plenièrè; but receiving an absolute refusal to belong to that body, from persons on whose fidelity and attachment he had fully relied, he was under the mortifying necessity of abandoning the whole code, from his utter inability to carry into effect that part, upon which the rest materially depended: such was the change in the minds even of persons of high rank towards their sovereign. It is, therefore, no wonder, that libels, of the most atrocious nature and most dangerous tendency, were distributed with incredible industry, in which the king was openly branded with the names of tyrant and oppressor, and the people were called upon to stand forward and avenge their wrongs.

It has been mentioned, that the archbishop of Toulouse succeeded M. de Calonne, in the administration of the finances, in May 1787; not long after which, he was appointed prime minister, an office which conveyed so much authority in France, that it was not frequently filled. He continued in this situation (having been in the mean time advanced to the archbishoprick of Sens) till the

CHAP.
XII.

25th of May 1788, when, alarmed by the formidable height to which the embarrassments of government had arisen, he suddenly left Versailles, and retired into Italy.

The king, finding himself thus forsaken by the man, whose advice had brought him into his present state of unexampled difficulty, and desirous of employing a person, whom he knew to be acceptable to the people, recalled M. Necker*, and placed him at the head of the finances. Nothing could exceed the public joy at this appointment, which was followed by the dismissal of the other ministers, and by the release of the duke of Orleans, and of M. d'Espremenil and M. de Mosambert.

The parliament of Paris, which had been suspended from the exercise of its duties, was restored about the middle of September; and soon gave full proof, that no alteration had taken place in the principles of its members. They inveighed with the greatest bitterness, against the conduct of the late ministers, and threatened to bring them to justice by a criminal prosecution; but to this the king refused his consent, alleging, that he himself was alone responsible for the measures of which they complained. Having failed in this at-

* He had been finance minister from 1776 to 1781, when he left France.

tempt, they ordered all the king's decrees, which related to their suspension, or which they considered as encroaching upon their privileges, to be publicly burnt in Paris—an act which could not fail, and was probably intended, to bring the royal authority into contempt, and to irritate afresh the minds of the people, which had been somewhat appeased by his majesty's recent compliance with their wishes.

CHAP.
XII.

It was now determined, by the advice of M. Necker, to call together the states general, a measure for which the nation had been long impatient ; but, as there had been no meeting of this kind since 1614, the year in which Louis the thirteenth was declared of age, it was thought a necessary previous step, to summon a new convention of the notables, for the purpose of consulting them relative to the organization of the states general. Besides the mode of election, the qualifications of the electors and the elected, and other inferior matters, there were two grand points to be considered, which had been much agitated and discussed by the public, namely, of what number the states general should consist ; and whether the three orders, the clergy, the nobles, and the tiers état, or commons, should sit and vote together, or in separate chambers.

CHAP.
XII.

The notables met on the 6th of November, and recommended, after the example of 1614, that there should be 300 deputies from each of the three estates ; and that the three orders should sit and vote in separate chambers, as had been almost the invariable practice from the time the tiers état had been first admitted to these convocations by Philip le bel, in 1302 ; but, most unfortunately, the king was prevailed upon, by M. Necker, to consent, that the tiers état should send 600 deputies, and the clergy and nobles 300 each ; and nothing was said in the edict, with respect to their deliberating in one or in separate chambers. Whether the silence on this head arose from design or from negligence, the minister was equally unpardonable, since it authorized the electors of the tiers état to consider the question as undecided, and afforded them an opportunity of instructing their representatives to make every exertion to cause the three estates to sit together in the same chamber.

Under these circumstances, the assembly of the states general was opened at Versailles, on the 5th of May 1789, by a speech from the king ; and, on the following day, the three orders, conformably to antient practice, met separately in three chambers prepared for

them. The first business to be transacted was, the verification of their powers ; and the tiers état invited the clergy and nobles to come to their hall, the largest of the three, for that purpose. The proposal was rejected by a small majority among the clergy, and by a large one among the nobles. This was a point of great importance, as it involved, or at least might materially affect, the grand question, whether the states general were to sit as three distinct bodies, the consent of each of which should be necessary to the passing of any law, or as one body, in which every motion was to be decided by a majority of votes. In the former case, the clergy or the nobles would obviously have it in their power to put a stop to any proceeding injurious to their own order, or which they might disapprove on any other grounds ; and in the latter, the tiers état confidently hoped, they should be able to carry any measure, as their number equalled the joint numbers of the other two orders ; and they well knew, that among themselves there was a general coincidence of sentiment, and that they should be joined by many of the clergy, and even by a few of the nobles. They were therefore determined not to yield ; and declining to enter upon any business of state, they employed their time in violent and

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

CHAP. factious debates, reflecting in the severest
 XII. terms upon the conduct of the other two
 1789. orders. These harangues, at which persons
 of all descriptions were allowed to be present,
 were regularly transmitted to Paris, where they
 were received with the warmest approbation, and
 excited the most lively interest.

In a short time, the tiers état, finding the popular cry strongly in their favor, declared themselves the real representatives of the nation; and intimating, that they were about to assume the exclusive power of legislation, sent a final message to the nobles and clergy, requiring their attendance as individuals. They were in consequence joined by a small number of the clergy; and on the 17th of June, solemnly voted themselves the sovereign legislators of the country, under the name of the National Assembly*. In this new and usurped character, without paying any regard to the king, or to the other two chambers of deputies, who continued their sittings, they pronounced, by a public decree, all taxes which

* The duke of Dorset, the English ambassador, writing to Mr. Pitt from Paris, July 9th, 1789, said: "Mr. Jefferson, the American minister at this court, has been a great deal consulted by the principal leaders of the tiers état; and I have great reason to think, that it was owing to his advice, that order called itself L'Assemblée Nationale."

had been imposed without the consent of the representatives of the people, that is, subsequently to the last meeting of the states general, to be null and void; giving, however, a temporary sanction to the existing taxes, although illegal, till the assembly should be able to fix, as they expressed it, the principles of national regeneration, and provide for the security of the public creditors.

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

A few days after this decree was passed, the king proposed in person to the states, as he still called them, a plan for a new constitution; the general outlines of which were, that no new tax should be imposed, or money borrowed, for the national service, without the consent of the states general; that all exemptions with respect to the payment of taxes should be abolished; that all oppressive seigneurial rights and services should cease; that the liberty of the press should be established; that the operation of lettres de cachet should be so restrained as to secure personal freedom, except in cases of actual violation of the laws; that provincial states should be established in different parts of the kingdom, with definite local powers; and that justice should be administered, both in the civil and criminal courts, with the strictest impartiality, and most rigid attention to the rights of

every description of his subjects. These reforms, which would have removed all the oppressive grievances of which the people complained, and in fact have reduced the hitherto arbitrary power of the king to that of a limited monarch, might have satisfied the bulk of the nation at an earlier period, and have put an end to all dissension: but being by no means suited to the views and principles of those, who were now the ruling party in the national assembly, the plan was instantly rejected by that body, with indignation; and a resolution passed, declaring their adherence to their former decree, and pronouncing the persons of the deputies sacred and inviolable. Sensible of their strength, and encouraged by the success and popularity which had already attended their exertions, they proposed to form a constitution according to their own ideas, without accepting any suggestion from the king, or shewing any attention to his sentiments and wishes.

A great majority of the clergy, and a considerable number of the nobles, having joined the tiers état, the remainder of both of the orders, at the earnest but most unwise desire of the king, followed their example on the 27th of June. This compliance probably originated in the vain hope of conciliating

the national assembly, but, in fact, it afforded a great triumph to the disaffected party; and so far was it from moderating their proceedings, that this faction having now gained additional influence, proposed and carried a series of measures totally destructive of institutions, which had existed from time immemorial. It was resolved, that all feudal services should be redeemable at an equitable price, except personal ones, which were to cease, without compensation; that all manorial jurisdictions, all the charters and privileges of towns and districts, and all tithes due to the clergy, should be abolished. These decrees, affecting very valuable rights and property to a great extent, were considered only as preparatory steps to the establishment of a new constitution. As the ground-work of their system, the national assembly published, at the end of August, a declaration of the rights of men and of citizens, containing the most absurd and visionary theories, not only irreconcilable with all ideas of kingly government, but utterly inconsistent with the true ends of every form of civil polity, the security of individuals, and the tranquillity of the public.

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

Repeated attempts were made by ministers, under the sanction of the national assembly,

CHAP.
XII.

1789.

to raise money by public loans, but they all failed; and no taxes being paid in the present convulsed state of the nation, there was not only no money for the ordinary purposes of government, and for the discharge of the interest of the national debt, but the king was reduced to so great distress, as to be compelled to send his plate to the mint to be coined, as the only means of procuring the common necessities of life for himself and the royal family.

These proceedings at Versailles were greatly encouraged and promoted by the events which were taking place at the same period at Paris, there being a constant communication, and perfect understanding, between those who had acquired the ascendancy in the capital, and the predominant party in the national assembly. Meetings were held in different districts of the city of Paris, at which factious demagogues, using the most irritating invectives against the king and his ministers, excited the people to acts of treason and rebellion; and measures were usually discussed at clubs, consisting of persons of the most turbulent and daring character, before they were brought forward in the national assembly. The licentiousness of the press was also carried to such an extreme, that pamphlets were

continually issuing forth, containing matter of the most seditious and inflammatory nature, subversive of social order, and tending to loosen all the bonds which unite mankind in civilized life. Paris, at this time, abounded with political and sceptical men of letters, who, treading in the footsteps of Voltaire and his associates, degraded their talents, by representing religion as an invention of priests and statesmen; government, as an encroachment upon natural freedom; property, as an infringement of natural right; and distinction of ranks, as contrary to natural equality. Every art was practised to seduce the soldiers from their allegiance; and the success of these attempts soon became apparent. Some troops were called to quell a riot, on the 23d of June; but, though the mob were committing acts of the grossest outrage, not a single soldier could be induced to fire upon, or to use any force against, his fellow-citizens. From this moment there was an end of military discipline, and of civil subordination; and the people disregarding all established authority, whether derived from the sovereign, or from their own municipal institutions, the city became a prey to every species of disorder, violence, and anarchy. The disaffected citizens, to the number of 30,000, took advantage of this dan-

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

gerous and alarming state of the metropolis, and enrolled themselves, under pretence of preserving the public peace. They assumed the plausible name of national guards; and having seized arms from the public arsenals, and being joined by a great number of mutinous soldiers, quickly became a formidable military corps, without the slightest acknowledgement of any dependance upon the king, or of owing him any obedience. They elected their own officers, and appointed the marquis de la Fayette, who had distinguished himself in America, both as a military man, and as a promoter of the rebellion, their commander in chief. One of the earliest acts of these national guards was, the destruction of the bastille, on the 14th of July; the governor and major of which were massacred, and their heads carried upon pikes through the city. This was the first instance of that sanguinary spirit, which marked the revolution in its more advanced periods. The prévôt des marchands, or chief magistrate of Paris, M. de Foulon, late one of the king's ministers, and several other persons who were obnoxious to the populace, were soon after put to death, in the most inhuman manner. There were also frequent insurrections, in which, the national guards being unable or unwilling to

repress the rioters, many houses were demolished, and many lives lost.

CHAP.
XII.

1789.

Societies and clubs, connected with those in Paris, had for some time existed in all the cities and considerable towns throughout the kingdom, for the purpose of preparing the public mind for revolutionary doctrines. These societies, or debating clubs, as they were now called, from their open discussion of political subjects, being much increased in number, had great effect, with the assistance of seditious pamphlets, in spreading the most mischievous opinions, and in stimulating the peasantry to the most atrocious outrages, even against their greatest benefactors. Many of the nobility and gentry, resident in the provinces, who had, from any cause, rendered themselves unpopular, were assassinated, their mansions destroyed or pillaged, and their patents and title deeds burnt; and in these tumults and disorders the military frequently joined. In short, all trace of regular government was entirely done away; and the whole of France was at the mercy of an infuriated populace, with arms in their hands, who well knew that the most open and daring deeds of plunder, conflagration, and murder, must pass with impunity. Several branches of the royal family, and numerous persons of distinction

CHAP.
XII.

1789.

and property, quitted the kingdom, and took refuge in different foreign countries, while a large proportion of the middle and lower ranks of the community, laying aside their habits of industry and peaceable conduct spent their time at political meetings, or in committing excesses of every description, to the neglect and injury of trade, manufactures, and agriculture*.

* Mr. Eden gave the following account to Mr. Pitt, in a letter written from Paris, August 27th, 1789 : " It would lead me too far to enter into the strange and unhappy particulars of the present situation of this country. The anarchy is most complete ; the people have renounced every idea and principle of subordination ; the magistracy (so far as there remain any traces of magistracy) is panic-struck ; the army is utterly undone ; and the soldiers are so freed from military discipline, that on every discontent, and in the face of day, they take their arms and knapsacks, and leave their regiments ; the church, which formerly had so much influence, is now in general treated by the people with derision ; the revenue is greatly and rapidly decreasing amidst the disorders of the time : even the industry of the laboring class is interrupted and suspended. In short, the prospect, in every point of view, is most alarming : and it is sufficient to walk into the streets, and to look at the faces of those who pass, to see, that there is a general impression of calamity and terror. Such a state of things must come soon to a crisis ; and the anxiety to be restored to order and security, would soon tend to establish, in some shape, an executive government, but there is a cruel want of some man of eminent talents to take the lead. I know personally all who are most conspicuous at present ; and I see no man equal in any degree to the task which presents itself."

In addition to other evils, there was, at this time, a great want of corn in Paris ; and on the 5th of October, a vast multitude of men and women assembled round the hotel de ville, calling aloud for bread and arms. Every exertion to quiet or disperse these rioters was ineffectual ; and at length having furnished themselves with the arms deposited in the hotel de ville, they set out for Versailles, to demand, as they said, bread from the king and the national assembly. A few hours afterwards, the national guards, who had refused to act against the mob, insisted upon following them to Versailles ; and la Fayette, having in vain endeavored to dissuade them, felt himself under the necessity of accompanying his soldiers. It was midnight before the national guards arrived at Versailles ; and at that late hour, deputies from the mob and from the guards were admitted into the presence of the king, who promised that every effort should be made to supply the capital with corn. The remainder of the night was passed without any act of violence ; but at six o'clock the next morning, a mixed and numerous body of national guards, and of Parisian rabble, rushed into the court of the palace, where they cruelly murdered two of the life guards ; and then with the most horrid execrations and threats,

CHAP.

XII.

1789.

broke into the queen's apartments, from which her majesty had barely time to escape. The lives of the king and queen were almost miraculously saved by the timely arrival of la Fayette and his officers, who had just influence enough to prevail upon these ruffians to quit the palace; but they could not be persuaded to retire beyond the court, where they called aloud for the king and queen. Their majesties made their appearance in a balcony, the queen with the dauphin in her arms; and after a short calm, there was an universal cry, for the king and queen to go to Paris. It was utterly impossible to resist. Within very few hours, the king, queen, and royal family, set out for Paris, nominally under the escort of 100 members of the national assembly, but really carried captive by the national guards, and the mob, who had come from Paris the preceding day. They were conducted to the Thuilleries, and placed under the custody of a party of the national guards.

The national assembly removed to Paris, and, proceeding in their great work of new-modelling the constitution, decreed that the national assembly, which was in future to consist of 745 members, to be elected every two years, according to prescribed rules, should have the power of making laws, the

king being allowed only a suspensive veto ; that the distinction of provinces should cease, and the kingdom be divided into 83 departments, each consisting of about 324 square leagues ; that all the parliaments, together with all the courts of canon and political law, should be annihilated ; that the local statutes and customs of the different municipalities should not remain in force ; that all the revenues and possessions of the church should be confiscated * ; that all monastic institutions should be suppressed ; that the higher orders of the clergy should be abolished, and small annual stipends paid to the parochial priests ; and, to complete the ruin of the church, parochial benefices were rendered elective, and persons of all religions, not excepting Jews, were allowed to vote at these elections. Every clergyman, already in possession of a benefice, was required, under penalty of deprivation, to swear, that he would maintain, to the utmost of his power, the new constitution, and particularly the regulations relative to the civil obligations of the clergy. Many of the beneficed clergy, refusing to take this oath, as being contrary to that which they had taken

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

* The decree for this purpose, was proposed by Talleyrand, bishop of Autun, who afterwards made so conspicuous a figure in the revolution.

CHAP.
XII.

1789.

at their ordination, and as being highly disapproved by the pope, were ejected from their preferments, and left without any means of subsistence. The annual expenditure of the nation exceeding the annual income, in its present reduced state, by twelve millions sterling, the national assembly decreed, that the confiscated possessions of the church, after providing for the trifling stipends of the parochial clergy, should be immediately applied to the service of the public; but these lands, under the present circumstances of the country, not being convertible into ready money, bills, called assignats, were issued upon the security of the church property, and being transferable came into general circulation. Decrees were also passed for abolishing hereditary nobility in France for ever, and for prohibiting the use of all titles, all terms of distinction and respect, all names derived from estates or places, all armorial bearings and liveries; in short, every thing which denoted degrees of rank, or implied superiority of station. These decrees, all of which passed within the short period of a few months, entirely subverted the civil and ecclesiastical establishments of the country, and the king was compelled to express his consent to them openly, in the national assembly.

This revolution in the government was the consequence of a revolution in the sentiments and principles of the bulk of the nation, aided by the peculiar circumstances of the times, and the indiscretion and weakness of the ministers of the crown. The French people had long been distinguished for personal attachment to their sovereign, and for yielding implicit obedience to his commands; but so complete was the change introduced by the new philosophy, that though they were now governed by a king, who had been more mild in the exercise of his power than any of his predecessors, and who had given the most decisive proofs of his readiness to establish a free government, yet they suffered him to be deprived of all real authority, and to be reduced to a condition little better than that of a prisoner in his own palace. It was, indeed, evident, that the life of the king, and the lives of all the royal family remaining in France, depended upon the will of men, who had already been guilty of the most wanton and atrocious acts of injustice and cruelty, of confiscation, rapine, and murder, which ever disgraced the annals of a civilized nation. Those members of the national assembly, and that part of the public, who were friends to a limited monarchy, and wished only for a mo-

CHAP.
XII.
1789.

derate reform, did not perceive the tendency of the first steps taken in this revolution, and afterwards did not possess sufficient energy and strength to resist the more violent proceedings.

In the early part of 1790, a set of persons, who had hitherto been known by the name of the Breton committee, having at first consisted of deputies to the states general, belonging to the province of Brittany, assumed the name of the Jacobin club, from their meetings being then held in the hall of the Jacobin or Dominican friars at Paris. This club, at which political questions were debated, afterwards admitted other members, and soon including all who took a forward part in the national assembly, became so distinguished as to give name to the principles, to which the revolution owed its origin and establishment.

Such were the zeal and activity of the French innovators, and such the extent and boldness of their plans, that there was no part of Europe, in which agents were not employed, for the purpose of disseminating their pernicious principles; the adoption of which, indeed, by other countries, they considered as essential to the permanent establishment of their system at home. In this kingdom, these democratic missionaries found not only indi-

viduals, but political societies of men, ready to co-operate with them, and to promote their views. The king of France had not been many days forcibly conveyed by his own subjects to Paris, nor the nobility long proscribed, and the church plundered, before several of these societies sent letters of congratulation to the national assembly, and resolutions were passed at their meetings, of an inflammatory and dangerous tendency. The means, by which the revolution was carried on and effected, if not positively praised by the English societies, were pronounced to be justified by the end; the example was recommended as a glorious pattern for the imitation of mankind; and sanguine expectations were held out, that the overthrow of regal despotism in France would lead to what they called the general emancipation of Europe. At the same time our press teemed with the most daring libels upon the constitution of this country, which were circulated gratis with astonishing industry, not only among the lower classes of the community, but through the army and navy. In these writings the people were invited to form themselves into clubs and societies, after the manner of the French, and several were actually formed in some of the most populous towns of the king-

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

dom, avowedly affiliated, to use an expression of their own, to the societies and clubs in France.

UNDER these circumstances, parliament met on the 21st of January 1790. In the speech from the throne, the king, after lamenting the continuance of the war upon the continent, and the internal commotions which disturbed the tranquillity of different parts of Europe, informed the two houses, that he still received assurances of the good disposition of all foreign powers to these kingdoms; and that he was persuaded they would entertain with him, a deep and grateful sense of the favor of Providence, in continuing to his subjects the increasing advantages of peace, and the uninterrupted enjoyment of those invaluable blessings, which they had so long derived from the excellent constitution, under which they lived. He then mentioned the estimates and supplies for the present year, in the usual manner; and acquainted parliament, that during the recess he had taken measures, which were rendered necessary by the situation of the country, for preventing the exportation, and facilitating the importation, of certain sorts of corn: And he concluded, with recommending a perseverance in the

same zeal and attention to the public service, which had hitherto appeared in all their proceedings, and of which the effects had been so happily manifested in the increase of the national revenue, the extension of the commerce and manufactures of the country, and the general prosperity of his people.

CHAP.
XII.
1790

The addresses were voted in both houses, without the slightest opposition, and with scarcely any debate.

THE measures brought forward by Mr. Pitt, in the present session, were few in number; and the account of them may be comprized within a short compass.

THE first related to a subject mentioned in the king's speech. The want of corn at Paris, in the preceding summer, has been noticed; and before much progress was made in the revolution, the French government applied to our ministers for 20,000 sacks of flour*; but

* Upon that occasion M. Necker wrote the following letter to Mr. Pitt, dated June 25, 1789: "J'éprouve en vous écrivant, monsieur, deux sentiments bien différents, l'un de tristesse lorsque je réfléchis au sujet de cette lettre, l'autre excité par une plus douce émotion en pensant, que je m'approche, pour la première fois de ma vie, d'un ministre, dont les rares vertus, dont les sublimes talens, dont la superbe renommée fixent depuis long-tems mon admiration et celle de toute l'Europe; recevez, monsieur, un hommage, qui aura

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

Mr. Pitt, learning from the principal corn factors, with whom he had a conference, that the sending out of the kingdom such a quantity of flour, though not exceeding a week's consumption in the metropolis, would probably raise the price of wheat, informed the French ambassador, that the request could not be granted. It was, however, afterwards known, that individuals were supplying France with corn ; and it being feared, that if this practice continued, England herself might suffer very serious inconvenience from the want of that

peut-être un léger prix à vos yeux, si vous pensez, qu'il vous est rendu par une personne, à qui l'expérience a fait connoître la difficulté des affaires publiques, la multitude infinie de combinaisons qu'elles présentent, et quelquefois l'inconstance des jugemens des hommes.

“ Je viens à l'affaire que je recommande à la protection du plus noble ami de l'humanité : je dois laisser à M. l'ambassadeur de France le soin de vous expliquer l'importance dont il seroit pour cette partie de la France d'obtenir une extraction de farines d'Angleterre ; je lui laisse aussi le soin d'être auprès de sa majesté Britannique l'interprète de l'intérêt que prend le roi de France au succès de sa demande. Je ne sçais s'il sera nécessaire, que cette demande soit portée au parlement d'Angleterre ; mais si cela est, je n'ai nulle défiance de sa réussite : une nation genereuse comme la votre se plaira à sortir un moment de la rigueur de la loi pour rendre un service que tant de motifs respectables solliciteront auprès d'elle, et qui sont tous dignes de l'éloquence persuasive du plus vertueux des orateurs.

“ J'ai l'honneur d'être avec le plus parfait attachement, monsieur, votre très humble et très obéissant serviteur,

“ Necker.”

necessary article of life, especially in case of a late or a bad harvest in the following year, a royal proclamation was issued in December, prohibiting the exportation, and encouraging the importation, of corn. This proclamation, though acknowledged to be a wise measure, was not strictly legal; and therefore, Mr. Pitt, immediately after the meeting of parliament, introduced a bill of indemnity, which passed both houses without difficulty.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

IN opening the budget, on the 19th of May, Mr. Pitt assured the house, that he felt particular satisfaction in being able to prove, that the income of the country had exceeded his estimate, which was formerly censured as too high by gentlemen on the opposite side of the house. It appeared, he said, from authentic documents upon the table, that the annual average produce of the taxes, for the last three years, was nearly $15\frac{3}{4}$ millions, and that the average of the last two years was $16\frac{1}{4}$ millions; and that on the 5th of April, there actually remained in the exchequer, a surplus of 621,151*l*. He enumerated all the particulars of the supply, which amounted to nearly six millions; and shewed that the ways and means, afforded by the flourishing condition of the finances, were fully competent to meet

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

the whole of that charge, without having recourse to loan or taxes. He observed, that various extraordinary expences beyond a peace establishment, to the amount of six millions, had been defrayed since the year 1786, with the assistance of a loan of only one million ; that in the mean time, more than five millions of the capital of three per cents had been discharged ; that the country was at that moment in a situation of prosperity far greater than at any period before the last war ; and that he saw no reason whatever, after the minutest investigation, to fear, that the present income, large as it was, would not be permanent ; but, on the contrary, he entertained the most sanguine expectations of a farther augmentation, from the increase of our commerce, our manufactures, our industry, our population, and our wealth. This statement was highly satisfactory to all who heard it ; and a member mentioned, that during the 15 years he had enjoyed a seat in that house, this was by far the most prosperous budget he had ever remembered.

Mr. Pitt, on a following day, represented to the house, that the tontine, which parliament had established last year, upon his suggestion, had not filled in the manner he expected ; and

that being now at a discount, and a considerable part of it undisposed of, the individuals, who had contracted for the whole, must sustain a very serious loss, if some relief were not afforded them. He proposed, therefore, that those who held the shares, should have the option of exchanging them for long annuities of equal value; and that the lords of the treasury should be authorized to nominate lives, according to the different classes, for any shares which might be ultimately vacant, and be considered as holding them for the public. By this expedient the original subscribers would be relieved, without any detriment to the revenue; and the interest of persons, who had purchased shares and nominated lives, would not be affected. Very little objection was made to this proposal; and the bill for carrying it into execution was agreed to, without any division in either house.

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

THE bill which passed in 1787, for farming the post horse duty, being novel in its principle, and intended as an experiment, was limited to three years; and the produce of the tax having increased 30,000*l.* a year, Mr. Pitt proposed, that this mode of collecting the duty, which had been attended with such advantage to the revenue, without causing

CHAP. any inconvenience or mischief, should be con-
 XII. tinued for three years more ; and a bill for
 1790. that purpose passed also without any division.

PETITIONS against the bill which passed last year, for subjecting tobacco and snuff to the excise laws, were in this session presented to the house of commons, from the manufacturers of those articles ; and after evidence had been heard at the bar, Mr. Sheridan strongly urged the repeal of the act, upon the ground, that the excise system was inapplicable to the manufacture of tobacco. On the other hand, Mr. Pitt contended, that this argument was proved to be utterly without foundation, by the simple fact, that the duty upon tobacco, since it was put under the excise, had, in the six most unfavorable months of the year, produced 130,000*l.* more than in the same period, while under the customs ; whence he inferred, that this change would benefit the revenue nearly 300,000*l.* a year. He, therefore, opposed the motion for the repeal, which was negatived by a majority of 191 to 147 ; but he afterwards introduced a bill to facilitate the collection of the tax, and to remove some of the objections stated by the manufacturers. This bill passed the house of commons after two divisions, in

which the majorities in its favor were very large. In the house of lords it was also opposed, but carried by a majority of 55 to 33. CHAP.
XII.
1790.

In the course of these debates much was again said by the leaders of opposition, in both houses, against the system of excise, as being inconsistent with the liberty of the subject; upon which it was observed, that the fair trade had considerably increased under this mode of collection, which was infinitely the most advantageous to the revenue, indeed the only one, with respect to several articles, which could be adopted; and that there could not, therefore, be a greater enemy to his country, than the person who endeavored to raise a clamor against the excise laws, with a view to abolish a system producing six millions a year, the loss of which must inevitably lead to national bankruptcy, and to all that anarchy and confusion then prevailing in France, where the want of an adequate revenue had been the immediate cause of the disorders.

These were Mr. Pitt's principal measures of finance, in the present session of parliament.

THE only other business of importance, brought forward by him, related to an event, which took place in a very distant part of the

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

world, and suddenly threatened to interrupt that continuance of peace, which was the object of his most ardent wishes. A small association of British merchants, resident in Bengal, acting under the immediate protection of the East India company, and with the sanction of the governor general of India*, sent two vessels, early in 1786, to the north west coast of America, to procure furs and ginseng†, for the supply of the Chinese market‡; and this voyage succeeded so well, that in January 1788, two other vessels sailed for the same purpose, which arrived at Nootka Sound, (situated about the 50th degree of latitude,) in the following May. The person, entrusted with the conduct of this expedition, purchased land of a neighboring chief, erected buildings, hoisted the British flag, and, having made a regular settlement, carried on an extensive and lucrative trade with the natives upon the coast, both to the north and south. These proceedings went on, without any molestation, till May 1789, when two Spanish ships of war arrived in Nootka Sound,

* Sir John Macpherson.

† A vegetable in great repute in China, as a medicine.

‡ This trade was recommended by captain King, in his account of captain Cook's last voyage, in consequence of furs having been purchased at Nootka Sound in the course of that voyage, and disposed of to great advantage in China.

the commander of which seized a British vessel lying there with her cargo, took possession, in the name of the king of Spain, of the land and buildings belonging to the British settlers, pulled down the British flag, and hoisted the Spanish in its stead. All the British were sent prisoners on board the Spanish vessels, where they were put in irons, and treated with great severity. Three other British vessels, which arrived soon after, were seized in the same manner; and two of the four were carried prizes to San Blas in Mexico, where the officers and men were detained nine months as prisoners. The pretext for these acts of violence was, that all the lands, comprized between Cape Horn and the 60th degree of north latitude, belonged to his catholic majesty, by virtue of a grant from the pope*. The truth, however, was, that though

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

* This pretended right was founded on a grant made to Spain, by a bull of pope Alexander the 6th, in 1493, and which was in imitation of one made about half a century before, by pope Eugenius the 4th, to the Portuguese, assigning to them all the lands they could discover to the eastward of Cape Non in Africa. To prevent his gift from interfering with that of his predecessor, Alexander drew an imaginary line from pole to pole a hundred leagues to the westward of the Azores, to serve as a limit to the two claims; allowing the right of the Portuguese to all lands discovered to the east of that line, and conferring all to the west of it upon the Spaniards.

CHAP. this settlement had really originated in the
 XII. spirit of private adventure, yet the court of
 1790. Spain, always jealous and mistrustful, suspected it to be the act of the British government, with the design, of first establishing a direct commercial intercourse with the Spanish American colonies, and ultimately detaching them from the dominion of the mother country*; and, therefore, the Spanish minister thought it wise to make an early effort to frustrate the attempt.

The first intimation of these transactions was received by our ministers, from the Spanish ambassador at the court of London, who, at the same time, desired, in the name of the king his master, that the subjects of Great Britain might not in future be allowed to make any settlement, or engage in any trade, upon the western coast of America, which was alleged to be already occupied by the subjects of Spain. Complaints were also made of the fisheries carried on by the British subjects, upon the seas adjoining to the Spanish American continent, as being contrary to the rights of the crown of Spain.

* This appears from the correspondence of our minister at Madrid. As early as April 1786, Count Florida Blanca entertained a general vague suspicion of our hostile views respecting South America.

In consequence of this communication, our government immediately demanded restitution of the vessels, and adequate satisfaction, previously to any other discussion. The court of Spain replied, that the vessels and crews had been set at liberty by the viceroy of Mexico; but it was added, that this was done upon the supposition, that nothing but ignorance of the rights of Spain, could have induced individuals of other nations to make trading establishments on those coasts; and, so far from any satisfaction being offered, a direct claim was asserted, to the exclusive rights of sovereignty, commerce, and navigation, in the territories and seas of that part of the world. This produced a fresh representation, in stronger terms, from our court to that of Spain, repeating the demand of such a full and adequate satisfaction as the nature of the case required; besides which, our ministers, having learned from private intelligence, that armaments were going on with great alertness in the ports of Spain, manifesting an intention on the part of that court to support its pretensions by force, gave immediate orders for similar preparations, that they might have it in their power to act with vigor and effect, in maintaining the honor of the British crown and the interests of British subjects.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

On the 5th of May, Mr. Pitt delivered a message to the house of commons from the king, in which his majesty, after reciting all these circumstances, recommended to his faithful commons, on whose zeal and patriotism he had the most perfect reliance, to enable him to make such augmentation of his forces, as might be eventually necessary for that purpose.

The following day being fixed for taking this message into consideration, Mr. Pitt observed, that however natural it might be to look with concern at the circumstances stated by his majesty, and at all the future possible occurrences to which they might lead, he conceived, he should not do justice to the feelings and public spirit of that house, if he entertained for a moment an idea, that there could be a difference of opinion as to the measures which ought to be adopted. There was no occasion for him to enlarge upon the facts contained in his majesty's message; the bare mention of them, he was persuaded, would be sufficient to induce the house to give their concurrence, and he hoped their unanimous concurrence, to the motion with which he should have the honor to conclude. These facts were; first, that some of his majesty's subjects had been forcibly interrupted in a trade,

which they had carried on for several years without molestation, in parts of America, where they had an incontrovertible right of trading, and where no country could claim an exclusive right of commerce and navigation; that this interruption had been made, by the seizure of a ship's cargo and company, without any previous notice, and in a moment of profound peace; that the officers and crew had been sent as prisoners of war to a Spanish port, and the cargo appropriated to the use of the captors, without the pretence of any regular jurisdiction, and without having gone through any forms of condemnation, uniformly resorted to in cases of prize, even at a time of open hostility. He wished to abstain from using any words of aggravation—this bare statement of the facts must be sufficient to induce a British house of commons to expect adequate satisfaction for the injury done to their fellow subjects, and to resent the indignity offered to the British flag. Upon an application to the court of Madrid, his majesty's ministers had been informed, that the vessels had been restored, but that no satisfaction had been made: on the contrary, the restoration was accompanied by a claim the most absurd and exorbitant, which could well be imagined; a claim which had never been

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

heard of before, indefinite in its extent, and which originated in no treaty, or formal establishment of a colony; nor did it rest on any of those grounds, upon which claims of sovereignty, navigation, and commerce are usually founded. He insisted strenuously on the disadvantages which Great Britain would sustain, by an admission of this claim: it would exclude his majesty's subjects from an infant trade, the future increase of which might prove materially beneficial; it would deprive this country of the means of extending its navigation and fishery in the southern ocean; and it might be detrimental to the best interests of the British empire, by provoking new claims and similar treatment from Spain or from other powers. He mentioned also, that preparations for war were going on in the different sea-ports of Spain; and from the whole of these facts and reasoning, he inferred, that it was incumbent upon the house, by granting an additional force, to enable his majesty to act with vigor, and effectually to maintain the honor of his crown, and the safety, happiness, and prosperity of his people. He hoped, however, that it might not be ultimately necessary to use the force hostilely; but his majesty's ministers would thus have it in their power to obtain an ample and honor-

able reparation, with such a settlement of the question of right, as should be most likely to secure the permanent continuance of tranquillity ; and heartily must they all rejoice, if, by the moderation and prudence of the court of Spain, a contest should be avoided. No man, he declared, would more regret even a temporary interruption of peace, than he should ; but he must ill deserve the situation in which he stood, and disgrace the character of a member of parliament, and a subject of Great Britain, if, however anxious he was for the preservation of the blessings of peace, he did not resist this extravagant claim, and advise vigorous preparation for war ; with a view, at all hazards, to assert our rights, and obtain a complete satisfaction for the injury sustained by individuals, and the insult offered to his majesty's crown. If justice was not done them by others, they must endeavor to do justice to themselves. The king, he was confident, would meet the unanimity of a loyal, a generous, and a brave nation, with the most spirited exertions.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

Mr. Pitt, in conclusion, moved an address, in which, conformably to these sentiments, the house assured his majesty, that although they should sincerely rejoice in such a termination of the discussions now depending, as might

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

continue and confirm the harmony and friendship which had happily subsisted between Great Britain and Spain, and prevent any grounds of misunderstanding in future, yet at the same time they felt it their indispensable duty to afford his majesty, the most zealous and effectual support in such measures, as might become requisite for maintaining the dignity of his majesty's crown, and the essential interest of his majesty's dominions.

Mr. Fox expressed his cordial concurrence with the motion, declaring, that no man could be more convinced than he was, of the necessity of an immediate and vigorous armament; nor could any man feel a warmer resentment at the unprovoked aggression of the court of Spain. He complimented Mr. Pitt, upon the forcible manner in which he had described this absurd and exorbitant claim, which had been urged, he said, equally in opposition to the principles of justice and of prudence. He observed, that the business to be settled was not the mere capture of the ships, but the great and important point of the definition of the claims of the court of Spain, in respect to America and the southern ocean; and therefore he trusted, that this country would not rest contented with a bare satisfaction for the injury, but would obtain a renunciation of

the claim, set up with so little ground of reason: this he understood to be the intent and meaning of his majesty's message, and on that idea he gave his vote for the address.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

Mr. Pitt admitted, that any satisfaction would be inadequate, which did not tend to prevent future disputes; and in reply to a remark of Mr. Fox, he said, that all the particulars, relative to the seizure of the ships, and the preparations for war in Spain, were not known when he opened the budget. The information, indeed, at that time received, was so imperfect, that it would have been highly improper to state it to the house, although it was sufficient to prevent his saying a word, upon that occasion, respecting the probability of the continuance of peace.

The address passed unanimously; as did a vote of credit a few days afterwards, for a million, to enable his majesty to proceed in the armament, which had been begun with great spirit, and with the general approbation of the public.

THE small majority, by which Mr. Beaufoy's motion for the repeal of the corporation and test acts, was rejected last year, encouraged the dissenters to renew their application in the present session; and they prevailed upon

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

Mr. Fox to undertake their cause. Mr. Pitt again opposed the motion, from a decided conviction, that it would be impolitic, in the highest degree, to relinquish acts adopted by the wisdom of our ancestors, to serve as a bulwark to the church, which was so intimately connected with the state, that the safety of the one was always liable to be affected by any danger, which might threaten the other ; and that in fact, the operation of these acts preserved the constitution in the preceding century. Mr. Fox had asserted, that no government had a right to animadvert upon the speculative opinions of its subjects, till they had been productive of real mischief ; and that the persons holding such opinions, could in no case be rendered fit objects of punishment or restraint by the legislature, till they had been actually guilty of conduct subversive of the public tranquillity. To this principle, Mr. Pitt strongly objected, remarking, that it would at once put an end to the wise policy of prevention, and open a door to the certain ruin of the constitution. In his speech, he alluded to the associations, which the dissenters were forming in different parts of the kingdom, for the purpose of supporting such candidates at the approaching general election, as would engage to vote for the repeal of

these acts. He censured this conduct in the dissenters, who, while they were condemning tests as qualifications for offices, were in fact themselves requiring a test of the fitness and competency of persons to discharge their parliamentary duty, by their sentiments upon a single point.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

Mr. Fox's motion was negatived by 294 to 105; which large majority arose, in a great degree, from the dread, inspired by the horrors of the French revolution, of making any alteration in the fundamental laws of the kingdom, and from a certain knowledge, that many of the principal dissenters were members of those societies, which were in friendly correspondence with the democratic party in France.

ON the 4th of March, Mr. Flood, who had long been a distinguished member of the Irish house of commons, and had taken an active part in all the political transactions of that country, moved, in the British house of commons, of which he had lately become a member, for leave to bring in a bill for amending the representation of the people in parliament; and in the debate which followed, Mr. Pitt observed, that he had himself some years since submitted to the house, a proposition of

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

the same nature, which had been successfully opposed, though the times, and a variety of other circumstances, were more favorable than at present. The chief objection, he said, then urged, was, the danger of innovation; and the knowledge of the impression which that argument had made, strengthened as it was by the recent occurrences in France, rendered him desirous that the consideration of the subject should be postponed, from a persuasion that the cause of reform would suffer by being brought forward at an improper moment. He declared, that no alteration had taken place in his sentiments upon the general question, which he should again introduce, whenever he should see a fit opportunity; but that, conceiving the present to be a most unsuitable time for such a discussion, he should, if the honorable gentleman persevered in his motion, feel himself under the necessity of proposing an adjournment; on which, Mr. Flood consented to withdraw his motion.

VERY little progress was made in the trial of Mr. Hastings in this session, the court having sat only thirteen days; and therefore, on the 11th of May, when it was evident, that the prorogation of parliament was at no great distance, Mr. Burke proposed a resolu-

tion to the house of commons, that the managers should be authorized to abandon a part of the charges, confining themselves to "such as shall appear to them the most conducive to the obtaining speedy and effectual justice;" which passed without a division. He then moved a second resolution, declaring, that the house was bound to persevere in the impeachment of Mr. Hastings, "until judgment should be obtained upon the important articles in the same;" which was carried by a majority of 48 to 31. Mr. Pitt spoke in favor of the former of these resolutions, upon the ground of its tendency to the furtherance of public justice, and the advantage of the party accused; and he voted for the second, although, he said, it did not appear to him to be absolutely necessary.

In the preceding session, Mr. Pitt had supported a motion for censuring Mr. Burke, who, in a speech before the house of lords, had accused Mr. Hastings of a much more heinous crime than any contained in the charges; and, in the present session, he concurred in a vote for reprimanding major Scott, who had published a letter in a newspaper, "reflecting, in scandalous and libellous terms, upon the honor and justice of the house of commons, and the conduct of the

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

managers of the impeachment.” In the former case, he thought, that Mr. Hastings, although justly under trial for certain offences, had still a right to the protection of the house against all irrelevant accusations; and, in the latter, that the managers had an equal right to be protected by the house, in the execution of their trust. In these instances, and, indeed, on every other occasion, Mr. Pitt acted with that impartiality, which, from the beginning of this business, he had determined to observe.

THE hearing evidence upon the subject of the slave trade, was re-commenced at an early period of the session, and continued to the end of it; but the examination of witnesses not being then completed, sir William Dolben’s slave-carrying bill was renewed for another year, with still farther amendments, and the main question deferred to the next session.

THE different opinions expressed by the leading members of opposition in the house of commons, during this session, relative to the French revolution, were so remarkable in themselves, and led to such important political consequences, in which Mr. Pitt was materially

concerned, that it will be proper to state the substance of what passed upon that subject. On the 5th of February, the day the military establishments for the current year were brought forward, Mr. Fox, in discussing the propriety of voting the proposed number of troops, which was the same as in the preceding year, remarked, that the conduct of the French soldiers, during the late commotions, tended greatly to remove one of the objections, which he had always entertained against standing armies. The army of France, he said, by refusing to obey the dictates of the court, had set a glorious example to all the military of Europe, and had shewn, that men, by becoming soldiers, did not cease to be citizens. Their conduct resembled the behavior of the patriotic soldiers of England, when the prince of Orange landed, to assist in preserving our civil and religious liberties. The French revolution was, indeed, in many respects like to the glorious event which established and secured the liberties of England. He contended, however, that the situation of the continent made it unnecessary for us to keep up so large an army as we had hitherto done, as he was persuaded, that the new form, which the government of France was likely to assume, would render her a better neighbor,

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

and less disposed to hostility, than when she was subject to the cabal and intrigues of the ambitions and interested ministers of an absolute monarch.

The only notice taken of these observations, on this day, was by colonel Phipps*, who said, that he could not but consider the manner in which Mr. Fox had spoken of the conduct of the military bodies in France, as a poor compliment to a profession, to which he had the honor to belong. He was of opinion, that the conduct of the British army in 1780, would have furnished the right honorable gentleman with a much more unexceptionable ground of panegyric. He would there have found the soldiers of this country, not joining those who were riotously disturbing the public peace, and scattering death and ruin among individuals; not, in violation of their oath and of their allegiance, heading anarchy and rebellion; but men, really feeling as citizens and soldiers, patiently submitting to the insults of the populace; and, in spite of the grossest provocations, maintaining the laws under the constituted authorities of the realm.

Four days afterwards, when these estimates were reported to the house, Mr. Fox, again

* Afterwards earl of Mulgrave.

adverting to the French revolution, confessed, that he was, both from feeling and principle, among those who exulted in the sudden and unexpected change, which had taken place in the affairs of France. Mr. Burke, who had not been present upon the former occasion, declared his extreme concern, that Mr. Fox should have dropped even a word of exultation at the revolution in France; or that he should be of opinion, that the objection to standing armies was at all lessened by the recent occurrences in that country. The house must, he said, perceive by his coming forward to notice an expression or two of his best friend, how anxious he was to keep the distemper of France from the least countenance in England, where some wicked persons had shewn a strong disposition to recommend an imitation of the French mode of reform. For his own part, he was determined to resist all violent exertions of the spirit of innovation, so distant from the principles of true and safe reformation; a spirit well calculated to overturn states, but perfectly unfit to amend them.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

“ Since the house was prorogued in the summer, continued Mr. Burke, much work has indeed been done in France. The French have shewn themselves the ablest architects

CHAP. of ruin, that have hitherto existed in the
 XII. world. In that very short space of time, they
 1790. have completely pulled down to the ground,
 their monarchy, their church, their nobility,
 their law, their revenue, their army, their
 navy, their commerce, their arts, and their
 manufactures.

“ France, by the mere circumstance of her vicinity, has been, and in a degree always must be, an object of our vigilance, either with regard to her actual power, or to her influence and example ; and her example, during a period of peace and friendly intercourse, has been, and may again become, more dangerous to us, than her worst hostility. In the last century, we were in danger of being entangled, by the example of France, in the net of relentless despotism. It is not necessary to say any thing upon that example; it exists no longer. Our present danger, from the example of a people, whose character knows no medium, is, with respect to government, a danger of anarchy, a danger of being led, through an admiration of successful fraud and violence, to an imitation of the excesses of an irrational, unprincipled, proscribing, confiscating, plundering, ferocious, bloody, and tyrannical democracy. On the side of religion, the danger of their example is no longer from intolerance,

but from atheism, a foul unnatural vice, foe to all the dignity and consolation of mankind, which seems in France, for a long time, to have been embodied into a faction, accredited, and almost avowed. These are our present dangers from France.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

“What the French now value themselves upon, is a disgrace to them. They glory, and some people in England have thought fit to take share in that glory, in making a revolution, as if revolutions were good things in themselves. All the horrors, and all the crimes, of the anarchy, which led to their revolution, which attended its progress, and which virtually attend it in its establishment, pass for nothing with the lovers of revolutions. The French might be said to be in possession of a good constitution, on the day the states general met in separate orders; and their business, had they been either virtuous or wise, was to secure the stability and independence of the states, according to those orders, under the monarch on the throne. It was their duty to redress grievances. Instead, however, of redressing grievances, and improving the fabric of their government, to which they were called by their king, and sent by their country, they took a very different course. They first destroyed all the balances

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

and counterpoises which served to fix the state, and to give it a steady direction ; and which furnished some correctives to any violent spirit which might occasionally prevail in any of the orders. These balances existed in their oldest constitution, and in the constitution of this country, and in the constitution of all the countries in Europe. These they rashly destroyed ; and then they melted down the whole into one incongruous, ill-connected mass. Having done all this, they instantly, with the most atrocious perfidy and breach of all faith among men, laid the axe to the root of all property, and consequently of all national prosperity, by the principles they established, and the example they set, in confiscating all the possessions of the church. They made and recorded a sort of institute and digest of anarchy, called, *The Rights of Man*, in such a pedantic abuse of elementary principles, as would have disgraced boys at school ; but this declaration of rights was worse than trifling and pedantic in them, as by their name and influence, they systematically destroyed every hold of authority by opinion, civil or religious, in the minds of the people. By this mad declaration, they subverted the state ; and brought on such calamities, as no country, without a long war, has ever been known to

suffer, and which may in the end produce such a war, and perhaps many such.”

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

He said, “ that the worst effect of all their proceedings was upon their military, which was rendered an army for every purpose, but that of defence ; that if the question was, whether soldiers were to forget that they were citizens, as an abstract proposition there could be no difference about it, though, as is usual when abstract propositions are to be applied, much was to be considered concerning the manner of uniting the characters of citizens and soldiers. As applied to the events which had happened in France, where the abstract principle was clothed with its circumstances, he thought his friend would agree with him, that what was done there furnished no matter of exultation, either in the act, or in the example. These soldiers were not citizens ; but base, hireling mutineers, and mercenary, sordid deserters, wholly destitute of every honorable principle. Their conduct was one of the fruits of that anarchic spirit, from the evils of which a democracy itself was to be resorted to, by those who were the least disposed to that form, as a sort of refuge. It was not an army in corps and with discipline, embodied under the respectable patriot citizens of the state in resisting tyranny. Nothing like it. It was the

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

case of common soldiers, deserting from their officers, to join a furious, licentious populace.

It was a desertion to a cause, the real object of which was, to level all those institutions, and to break all those connexions, natural and civil, which regulate and hold together the community by a chain of subordination ; to raise soldiers against their officers ; servants against their masters ; tradesmen against their customers ; artificers against their employers ; tenants against their landlords ; curates against their bishops ; and children against their parents. This cause of their's was not an enemy to servitude, but to society.

“ He felt some concern, that this strange thing, called a revolution in France, should be compared with the glorious event, commonly called the revolution, in England ; and that the late conduct of the French soldiery, should be compared with the behaviour of the English troops in 1688. At that period, the prince of Orange, a prince of the blood royal of England, was called in by the flower of the English aristocracy, to defend its antient constitution, and not to level all distinctions. To this prince so invited, the aristocratic leaders, who commanded the troops, went over with their several corps in bodies, to the deliverer of their country. Aristocratic leaders brought

up the corps of citizens, who had newly enlisted in this cause. Military obedience changed its object; but military discipline was not for a moment interrupted in its principle. The troops were ready for war, but indisposed to mutiny; and not one drop of blood was shed.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

“ But as the conduct of the English armies was different, so was that of the whole English nation at that time. In truth, the circumstances of our revolution (as it is called) and of that of France, were just the reverse of each other, in almost every particular, and in the whole spirit of the transaction. With us it was the case of a legal monarch, attempting to introduce arbitrary power—in France it is the case of an arbitrary monarch, beginning, from whatever cause, to legalize his authority. The one was to be resisted; the other was to be managed and directed: but in neither case was the order of the state to be changed, lest government should be ruined, which ought only to be corrected and legalized. Here we got rid of the man, and preserved the constituent parts of the state: there they got rid of the constitution of the state, and keep the man. What we did was in truth and substance, and in a constitutional light, a revolution, not made, but prevented.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

The person who held the government, and was at the head of the executive power, was abandoned by the country, because he wished to change the constitution; but the constitution remained. We took solid securities; we settled doubtful questions; we corrected anomalies in our law. In the stable, fundamental part of our constitution, we made no revolution; no, nor any alteration at all. We did not impair the monarchy; perhaps it might be shewn, that we strengthened it very considerably. The nation kept the same ranks; the same orders; the same privileges; the same franchises; the same rules for property; the same subordinations; the same order in the law, in the revenue, and in the magistracy; the same lords; the same commons; the same corporations; the same electors. The church was not impaired: her estates, her majesty, her splendor, her orders and gradations, continued the same: she was preserved in her full efficiency, and cleared only of a certain intolerance, which was her weakness and her disgrace. The church and the state were the same, after the revolution, as they were before; but better secured in every part.

“Was little done, because a revolution was not made in the constitution? No; every

thing was done, because we began with reparation, not with ruin. Accordingly, the state flourished. Instead of lying as dead, in a sort of trance, or exposed, as some others, in an epileptic fit, to the pity and derision of the world, for her wild, ridiculous, convulsive movements, impotent to every purpose but that of dashing out her brains against the pavement, Great Britain rose above the standard even of her former self. An era of a more improved domestic prosperity then commenced, and still continues, not only unimpaired, but growing under the wasting hand of time. All the energies of the country were awakened. England never presented a firmer countenance, or a more vigorous arm, to all her enemies, and to all her rivals. Europe, under her, respired and revived; every where she appeared as the protector, assertor, or avenger of liberty. The states of Europe lay happy under the shade of a great and free monarchy, which knew how to be great without endangering its own peace at home, or disturbing the internal or external peace of its neighbors."

In replying to these just and admirable sentiments, thus forcibly expressed, Mr. Fox acknowledged, that every man must regret the scenes of bloodshed and cruelty, which had

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

been acted in France; but still, when the severe tyranny, under which the people had so long groaned, was considered, the excesses they committed in their endeavor to shake off the yoke of despotism, might, he thought, be spoken of with some degree of compassion; and he was persuaded, that, unsettled as their present state appeared, it was preferable to their former condition; and that ultimately, it would be for the advantage of this country, that France had regained her freedom. He differed from Mr. Burke, in his opinion of the revolution in 1688. From that period we had undoubtedly to date the definition and confirmation of our liberties; and the case was certainly more nearly parallel to the revolution in France, than his right honorable friend seemed willing to allow.

Mr. Sheridan declared, that he differed decidedly from Mr. Burke, in almost every word which he had uttered respecting the French revolution; and that he could not conceive, how it was possible for any man, who valued the British constitution, and revered the revolution which obtained it, to unite with such feelings an indignant and unqualified abhorrence of all the proceedings of the patriotic party in France. He considered their's as just a revolution as our's, originating from

as sound a principle, and from a greater provocation. He vehemently defended the general views and conduct of the national assembly; and could not even understand, how men could be charged with having overturned the laws, the justice, and the revenues, of the country, who had, in all cases, interfered with zeal and alacrity, for the maintenance of order and just subordination. To traduce the national assembly was, in his mind, to libel the whole French nation: whatever was great and good in France, must be looked for there, or no where. He paid high compliments to several of its members, who had been most instrumental in effecting the revolution.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

This extraordinary speech called up Mr. Burke again, who said, he most sincerely lamented the inevitable necessity under which he felt himself, of now publicly declaring, that henceforth Mr. Sheridan and he were separated in politics. As a sincere and firm friend to real freedom, he was concerned to find, that there were persons in this country, who entertained theories of government not consistent with the safety of the state, and were perhaps ready to transfer, a part at least of that anarchy, which prevailed in France, to this kingdom, for the purpose of effectuating

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

their own designs. He professed the greatest attachment and reverence for the constitution, and his determination to stand forward in its defence on all occasions. In speaking of the state of France, he said, that he thought all substantial power now resided in the republic of Paris, whose authority guided, or whose example was followed by, all the other republics of France. The army was under the orders of the republic of Paris, and not under those of the national assembly.

Mr. Pitt shortly expressed his concurrence with Mr. Burke, in every point he had urged relative to the late commotions in France—at least in all fundamental principles they coincided, although he might, perhaps, differ from him in some particulars. He drew a comparison between the happy and genuine freedom enjoyed by Englishmen, and the unqualified nominal liberty of France, which was, in fact, at the present moment, the most absolute, direct, and intolerable slavery. He felt himself bound to acknowledge, that the sentiments that day delivered by Mr. Burke, respecting the British constitution, afforded him the sincerest satisfaction; and the manner, in which he had pledged himself to maintain it for ever inviolate, against all attempts to shake and enfeeble it, under whatever mask

they might be made, entitled him to the gratitude, not only of the present generation, but of the latest posterity.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

These declarations of contrary opinions by Mr. Fox and Mr. Burke, which were occasionally repeated in the course of the session, upon the important and interesting event of the French revolution, were mixed with strong expressions of personal regard and respect; but it was evident, that if the infection of French principles should ever extend to the subjects of this kingdom, so far, as to call for the interposition of government, these two eminent men, who, from the time Mr. Fox quitted office under lord North in 1774, had been closely connected in political life, would unquestionably adopt opposite lines of conduct; and it was equally clear, that there would, in that case, be a division also among other persons of great consideration and weight in the country, who had, for a long series of years, acted together as a powerful party in parliament, uniformly adverse to the measures of Mr. Pitt's administration, except on some few very particular occasions.

ON the 10th of June, the king put an end to the session; and in his speech from the throne, he informed the two houses, that he had not

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

received an answer to the representation which he had directed to be made to the court of Spain, in support of the dignity of his crown, and the interests of his people : he expressed a strong desire for the maintenance of peace, on just and honorable grounds ; but under present circumstances, he felt it indispensably necessary to proceed, with expedition and vigor, in preparations for war ; and his allies had evinced, in the most satisfactory manner, their determination to fulfil the engagements of existing treaties.

He next acquainted them with his intention of immediately dissolving the present, and of calling a new parliament ; and in signifying that intention, he could not omit to assure them, that he should ever entertain a deep and grateful sense of the affectionate and unshaken loyalty, the uniform and zealous regard for the true principles of our invaluable constitution, and the unremitting attention to the happiness and prosperity of his people, which had invariably directed all their proceedings ; and the good effects of which were manifested by the rapid increase of our manufactures, commerce, and navigation, the additional protection and security afforded to the distant possessions of the empire, the provisions for the good government of India, the improve-

ment of the public revenue, and the establishment of a permanent system for the gradual reduction of the national debt: these were unequivocal proofs of their resolution in encountering the difficulties with which they had to contend, and of their steadiness and perseverance in the measures best adapted to promote the essential and lasting interests of his dominions.

His majesty concluded by observing, that as the loyalty and public spirit, the industry and enterprize of his subjects, had seconded these exertions, so he could rely on their sense of the advantages which they at present experienced, as well as on their uniform and affectionate attachment to his person and government, for a continuance of that harmony and confidence so eminently displayed during the present parliament, which must at all times furnish the surest means of meeting the exigencies of war, or of cultivating, with increasing benefit, the blessings of peace.

ON the following day, the parliament, which had sat seven sessions, and more than six years, was dissolved by proclamation.

THE ministers were sincerely desirous of avoiding hostilities with Spain, and therefore,

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

while they were making the most vigorous preparations for war by sea and land, and taking measures for attacking the Spanish possessions in the West Indies, and America, they dispatched Mr. Fitzherbert to Madrid, where he arrived at the beginning of June, with full powers to settle the points in dispute between the two countries. The court of Spain transmitted to all the other courts of Europe, a declaration, dated June the 4th, for the purpose of explaining the grounds upon which the Spanish commander had acted at Nootka; and on the 13th of that month, the first secretary of state, count Florida Blanca, addressed a memorial to Mr. Fitzherbert, in which, after asserting "the indubitable right of the crown of Spain to the continent, islands, harbors, and coasts" of that part of the world, founded on treaties and immemorial possession, and complaining of the "harsh and haughty language of the English ministry," he said, that as the viceroy of Mexico had released the vessels which had been detained, "the king, his master, looked upon the affair as concluded, and was disposed to rest satisfied, provided Great Britain ordered her subjects in future to respect the rights of Spain."

It may be observed, that the treaties, here alluded to, only recognized the rights of the

crown of Spain to its territories and possessions in the West Indies and America; but did not convey or imply any general and exclusive right to the whole western American coast, which was the claim now set up. It was acknowledged, that Spain had no settlement or colony at Nootka sound; and consequently it became, by the law of nations, the property of the first occupiers, who should settle there, with the consent of the natives. Immemorial possession was certainly a most extraordinary ground of claim, on the part of Spain, to a country, which had been but recently known to Europeans.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

Mr. Fitzherbert, in answer to count Florida Blanca's memorial, urged, that the bare release of the vessels was not an adequate satisfaction for the insult offered to the British flag, and that his sovereign was fully justified, by the law of nations, in requiring a prompt and suitable reparation for those acts of aggression and violence, which had been committed against British subjects, by a naval officer in the service of Spain, as a necessary preliminary to a friendly negotiation. To this demand an evasive reply was sent, and there seemed reason to apprehend immediate war. Thirty ships of the line were collected at Cadiz; and application was made to the

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

French government for that assistance to which the king of Spain was entitled, and on which he had from the first fully relied, agreeably to the stipulations of the family compact*. A decree, which was accordingly passed by the national assembly, for the equipment of a fleet to act with Spain against Great Britain, afforded the French sailors an opportunity of shewing, that they too had shaken off all subordination and discipline, and were in every respect as licentious and disorderly as the soldiers. Besides being guilty of great excesses in the port and town of Brest, they refused to serve under any officers, except such as they themselves approved; they instituted committees to report upon the professional qualifications as well as the political principles of their commanders, and cashiered some, and appointed others at their pleasure. It was obvious that men, so little under command, were not likely to prove useful allies; and that there must be great danger of their communicating their principles to the Spanish sailors, in case of the junction of the two fleets. It was, therefore, generally supposed,

* This treaty between France and Spain was signed at Paris, August 15th, 1761, and established a strong defensive and offensive alliance between the two branches of the house of Bourbon.

that this state of the French navy, which precluded all hope of effectual co-operation, and which could not have been foreseen when orders were given for the seizure of the ships at Nootka, added to the great superiority of the British over the Spanish navy *, caused the Spanish ministers to be extremely desirous of bringing the dispute with Great Britain to an amicable conclusion ; and they were now probably more disposed to submit to the required concessions, from a conviction, contrary to their former suspicion, that the British government had in reality no hostile intentions whatever against the Spanish colonies in America ; and that, the present point of difference being settled, there was a fair prospect of the continuance of peace between the two countries. Accordingly, on the 24th of July, count Florida Blanca sent to Mr. Fitzherbert, a declaration, in which he explicitly said, that the king of Spain was willing to give satisfaction for the injury of which his Britannic majesty had complained, by making restitution of the British vessels and property seized at Nootka, and indemnifying the parties interested for the losses they had respectively sustained. On the same day, Mr. Fitzherbert

* The navy of Great Britain at this time consisted of 158 ships of the line, and that of Spain of 70.

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

returned a counter declaration, in which he announced the readiness of the king, his master, to consider the declaration of the court of Spain, together with the performance of the engagement it contained, as a full and entire satisfaction for the injury which had been received.

A negotiation was immediately commenced at Madrid, and on the 28th of October, a convention was signed by the ministers of the two courts, by which it was agreed, that all the land and buildings, of which British subjects had been dispossessed on the north-west coast of America, should be restored to them; that a just compensation should be made for all acts of violence and hostility committed at Nootka; that the subjects of Great Britain should not be disturbed or molested in carrying on their fisheries in the South Seas, or in making settlements on the coasts of those seas, in places not already occupied, for the purposes of commerce with the natives of the country; that no settlement should be made by the subjects of either nation, whether on the eastern or western side of America, nearer to Cape Horn, than the most southern of the present Spanish settlements; and, on the other hand, the king of Great Britain engaged to take the most effectual means for

preventing his subjects from carrying on illicit trade with the Spanish settlements, with which view it was stipulated, that British subjects should not navigate or fish within ten leagues of any part of the coast occupied by Spain.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

Thus did Mr. Pitt vindicate the insulted honor of his country, and without having recourse to actual hostilities, obtain, not only the restoration of the settlement on the north-west coast of America, where it was expected that a valuable fur trade might be carried on; but an indemnification for past injuries and losses, and a direct acknowledgement from the court of Spain, of the right of British subjects to continue their fisheries in the South Seas—a right which had hitherto been always controverted—in such clear and unequivocal terms, as to preclude the possibility of all future disagreement or doubt.

This termination of the dispute with Spain was highly satisfactory to the people of Great Britain; and was thought of sufficient importance to call for congratulatory addresses to his majesty, from the cities of London, Bristol, and Glasgow. It raised also the character of this country in foreign courts. Lord Auckland, who was at this time ambassador at the Hague, in writing upon this subject to

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

Mr. Pitt, said, " I am convinced, that if less firmness, energy, and activity had been shewn on our part, or even that if our fleet had not been found in the most perfect and readiest state that has been known in the annals of Great Britain, the reparation made to us would have been incomplete, and our farther objects would have been utterly unattainable otherwise than by war. With respect to the articles of the convention, I think them perfect, and not open to any fair cavil. Our worthy and wise friend the Pensionary, has perused the whole with great complacency, and said, when he had done, that he should not feel easy, until he should somehow in the course of his life have an hour's conversation with you. In short, there never was a business better conducted or better concluded; and there never was a moment, in which our country held such pre-eminency among nations,—and that pre-eminency stands on a firm foundation, on the recollection of the naval strength which we have exhibited to the world." The expedition with which a powerful fleet had been equipped upon this occasion, and the effect it contributed to produce, were the more gratifying to Mr. Pitt, as his brother, the earl of Chatham, was at this time first lord of the admiralty.

EARLY in the summer, the national assembly had decreed, that a general festival of confederation should take place on the 14th of July, the anniversary of the destruction of the Bastile in the preceding year; and the Champ de Mars, a large field near Paris, was prepared for this grand occasion. Seats, rising in the form of an amphitheatre, were erected for the accommodation of nearly half a million of persons; and in the centre was placed an altar, at which the king, the national assembly, deputies from all the departments, delegates from all the regiments stationed in the provinces, soldiers quartered in the metropolis, and its other inhabitants, swore to maintain the constitution against all opponents, and to continue free, or to perish. The same oath was taken on the same day, throughout the kingdom; and the object of this solemnity probably was, not merely to commemorate the event it professed to celebrate, and to honor the day which was considered as the dawn of liberty, but to confirm, and as it were to legalize, the revolution, by the universal suffrage of the people, and the personal obligation of every individual, as far as it could be obtained. This was perfectly conformable to the designs of the leading members of the national

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

assembly, and strongly marked the systematic plan and deliberate caution, by which their proceedings were uniformly directed.

M. Necker, who had been the idol of the French nation, not only lost his popularity about this time, but was, upon several occasions, treated with the grossest disrespect and contempt by the national assembly. Fearing, therefore, that if he remained in France, he should share the general fate of those, who had rendered themselves obnoxious to the ruling powers, he wrote a letter of resignation to the assembly, on the 4th of September; and immediately departed for Switzerland, his native country.

The national assembly having usurped all executive as well as legislative power, it was of very little importance, by whom the official situations were filled, although, as the forms of monarchy were in a great measure retained, the appointment of ministers was still made, and public business continued to be transacted, in the name of the king.

Besides the information received by our government, of what was passing in France, through the regular channel of the embassy, Mr. Pitt obtained private intelligence, by means of various other persons; and in particular there was at this time, a gentleman

resident at Paris, of considerable diplomatic experience, from whom he learnt, upon authority which could not be questioned, that Mirabeau and his party were well disposed towards England; and that while our negotiation with Spain was depending, they did not in reality encourage that court to persevere in its claims, although they did not object to the equipment of a French fleet. The knowledge of those circumstances was of great importance to the English ministers. The following letter, written early in October 1790, to the gentleman alluded to, will shew Mr. Pitt's sentiments upon the then state of affairs in France and Spain, and the principles upon which he acted with respect to both countries.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

“ Dear Sir,

“ I am extremely glad to find, by your letter, that you have succeeded so well in opening a confidential intercourse with the leaders of what appears to be the ruling party in France. Great advantages may perhaps be derived from this circumstance, in the present critical situation. I imagine, indeed, from your account, that we can hardly hope, in case war should take place with Spain, and should last for any time, that France will not ultimately take part in it.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

“ But I think there seems to be a reasonable prospect that the persons, with whom you communicate, may be brought to make such representations to the Spanish court, even if a rupture should have taken place; as may lead to a speedy restoration of peace, by a settlement of the points in dispute, conformably to the principles on which we have hitherto insisted. At least it may be fairly expected, that no immediate decision will be taken in France, to give actual succour to Spain, on the commencement of hostilities. And this point alone, if nothing more should finally be obtained, will be of great consequence, as it will give us considerable advantage in our first operations.

“ With respect, however, to the steps to be taken for bringing Spain to accede to our terms, great care must be taken that the French shall not appear as *mediators*, still less as *arbitrators*; and on this point I wait with great impatience for the more particular account which you promise to send to me, of lord Gower’s * ideas and your’s, after the next interview which you were to have with the members of the diplomatic committee. I am inclined to think it may be adviseable that

* Lord Gower was the British ambassador to the court of France.

lord Gower should be empowered, on the first news of a rupture, to communicate to the French ministry, a statement of the terms on which Mr. Fitzherbert has been instructed to insist, and of the grounds on which they are supported. If such statement should be laid by the ministry, before the diplomatic committee, or the national assembly, and a decree could be obtained, declaring, that those terms ought to be accepted by Spain, such a measure would be highly satisfactory. But I can hardly imagine that any thing so decisive can be obtained, unless they should be so far satisfied with our conduct, as to determine not in any case to support Spain, until she is willing to accede to the terms which we have proposed. Even, however, if this should happen, it is to be observed, that the war having once taken place, these terms may not appear to us sufficient, unless they should be accepted by Spain, within *a very short period*. The desire of restoring tranquillity would, in all events, incline this country to great moderation ; but, if the war should last any time, and our operations should have been successful, we shall hardly be expected to make peace, without gaining some farther advantage to compensate for our expence. This, however, must be a point wholly of subsequent

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

consideration. If, instead of a decisive approbation of our terms, the assembly or the committee should approve them only in part, and should suggest any different terms, which they may think reasonable, the situation will be much more delicate. Very little good can follow from such a measure, except that by the time which would probably be necessary for answers both from this country and Spain, any hostile decision on the part of France would be retarded, which I have already stated to be a considerable advantage to us. No progress, however, will be made in this way, either towards the restoration of peace (supposing a rupture to have taken place) or towards keeping France ultimately out of the war; as it must be impossible for us, at the suggestion of a third power, to recede, in any point, from the terms of the ultimatum which we have sent to Spain.

“ There are two other points, to which it is essential to attend in the whole of this business.

“ The first of these is, what seems, indeed, by your letter to be already fully understood, that, whatever confidential communications may take place with the diplomatic committee, for the sake of bringing them to promote our views, no ostensible intercourse can be admitted but through the medium of accredited

ministers, or the secretary of state for foreign affairs, and that in the name of the king.

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

“ The second point, which is of still more importance, is, that no assurances shall be given, directly or indirectly, which go farther, than that this country means to persevere in the neutrality, which it has hitherto scrupulously observed with respect to the internal dissensions of France, and from which it will never depart, unless the conduct held there should make it indispensable as an act of self-defence; and that we are sincerely desirous of preserving peace, and of cultivating, in general, a friendly intercourse and good understanding between the two nations. But the utmost care is necessary, under the present circumstances, to use no language, which can lead to an expectation of our taking measures to forward the internal views of any political party, or of our being ripe to form any alliance between the two countries, which, even if such a thing should be really wished in France, various events might make it impossible for us to accede to, and which would, in any case, at least require great consideration.

“ I am, with truth and regard,

dear sir,

your's, most sincerely,

W. PITT.”

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

The interview, mentioned as expected in the above letter, took place, and the deputation from the diplomatic committee consisted of Freteau, their president, Menou, an active member, and Barnave, soon afterwards president of the national assembly, to whom were more particularly explained the pacific views and wishes of the English government; and the committee, upon hearing the report of their deputation, unanimously resolved, “de saisir tous les moyens de rapprochement vis-à-vis de l’Angleterre, qui pouvoient tendre ou à prévenir la guerre ou à en arrêter le progrès.” This resolution was to be communicated to the French minister Montmorin, and to Mr. Pitt. It appears that, before the explanation thus given, a suspicion prevailed in the minds of the principal members of the national assembly, that England intended to take advantage of the disturbed state of France, in revenge for her conduct in the American war, and for the purpose of extending the British dominions in the West Indies. They had even imagined, that this was the real design of our armament, although professed to be on account of the dispute with Spain. It seems certain that, at this time, there was no wish for war with England, in

the ruling party in France; and that they were desirous of preventing war between England and Spain.

CHAP.
XII.
1790.

IN the course of this year, hostilities broke out in the southern parts of India, which gave rise to much discussion in the succeeding sessions of parliament. The Dutch had been in possession, about 150 years, of two forts, Cranganore and Jacottah, which had previously belonged to the Portuguese, for a similar period. These forts were situated between Mysore, of which Tippoo Saib was at this time sultan, and Cochin, the most valuable settlement Holland possessed in India. Hyder Ally, the father of Tippoo Saib, immediately before his rupture with the English in 1780, had seized and garrisoned Cranganore, for the protection of his dominions on that side, under pretence that it belonged to his tributary the rajah of Cochin; but in the progress of that war, in which he was unsuccessful, the Dutch recovered it, and it was secured to them by the peace of Mangalore in 1784. Tippoo, however, having succeeded to the throne of Mysore, laid claim to this fort; and it being understood, in the summer of 1789, that he was preparing an army for the purpose of seizing it, the Dutch, unwilling to engage

CHAP.

XII.

1790.

in war with so powerful a prince, sold both the forts of Cranganoore and Jacottah to the rajah of Travancore, to the safety of whose territories they were of great importance, and who had long wished to possess them. Tippoo, irritated at this disappointment, and alleging that the sale, without his consent, as their feudal sovereign, was both invalid and insulting, made an attack, in December, on the lines of Travancore, from which he was repulsed, with considerable loss; but, collecting a larger force, he made himself entirely master of them, in the following March; after which he besieged and took Cranganoore, Jacottah, and several other lesser forts.

The rajah was an ally of our East India company, and it was well known that Tippoo sultan had inherited both his father's ambition, and his inveterate enmity to the British interests in India *. The governors of Bengal

* Tippoo's territories were contiguous to those of our East India company, for the length of 450 miles. In a letter, dated Fort St. George, September 1787, sir Archibald Campbell, then governor of Madras, informed Mr. Pitt, that Tippoo had lately sent ambassadors to France, with valuable presents, amounting to above half a million sterling. He added, "the object of this mission is, to obtain from the French the use of six or eight thousand Europeans, on his paying for them; for which he has offered to cede to the French all the countries he shall conquer from the English in the Carnatic, by the assistance of these troops."

and Madras, therefore, remonstrated against this conduct of Tippoo, and offered their mediation ; at the same time announcing, that they should consider his perseverance in the invasion of Travancore, as a declaration of war against the company ; but it being soon evident, that he would not agree to an amicable adjustment, general Medows, in June, marched against him at the head of 15,000 men.

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

This army retook some of the forts ; but, not being able to bring Tippoo to a decisive engagement, returned to the neighborhood of Madras towards the end of the year. In the mean time the Mahrattas, the nizam of the Deccan, and the nabob of Arcot, had promised to co-operate zealously with the English, and sanguine expectations were entertained, that the next campaign would be more successful.

IN June, of this year, Mr. Pitt was unanimously chosen high steward of the university of Cambridge, in the room of the late earl of Hardwicke ; which honor was conferred upon him, with the following address :

Honoratissimo viro
GULIELMO PITT

Regiæ Majestati à Sanctoribus Consiliis

Præfectorum Ærario Principi

Regii Scaccarii Cancellario

Academiæ Cantabrigiæ Burgensi

Summo ejusdem Seneschallo designato.—

Quin patiare, vir ornatissime, nostro ut lætemur nomine, justissimoque solvamus gaudio, quòd summo nuperrimè orbata seneschallo, perfugium et patronum te agnoscat academia.

Diu jam est quòd propensissimum tuum erga nos perspeximus studium; quòd privilegia nostra, jura, et consuetudines defendenda tibi auspicatissimè delegavimus: nec mirum ideo, si qua ultra tui detur copia, quòd eam illicò amplectamur, eam frequentissimo senatu, insolitâ antehac assensione, plenissimisque suffragiis, poscamus omnes et postulemus.

Munus hoc haud multum, confitemur, tibi allaturum dignitatis; atque inconsulti forsàn videamur, qui tale nomen nostræ tenuitati præficiamus.—At circumspicientibus nobis quâ potissimum manu, quove tutelari favore, se suaque de cætero firmet, ornetque academia, solus tu ante oculos obversaris: non enim oblitus sumus, quo virtutis, quo eruditionis fundamine, in tantum tua creverit amplitudo; non eximiam illam, à pueritiâ usque, malè intelleximus indolem; neque nescivit academia mater, quantum jam olim habuerit, in quo de tam illustri superbiret nato.

Felices vero nos quorum negotiis vaces, summis ipse occupationibus districtus; quorum minutulis interesse rebus non dedigneris ipse interim libertatis publicæ vindex, in aure, in animo regis augustissimi constitutus, qui reipublicæ tot annis tam feliciter sis moderatus, quique unus omnium is esse videaris, ex quo vel Britanniæ ipsius pendeat salus.

Quòd ad tale autem accesseris fastigium, quòd æquales omnes longo reliqueris intervallo, quòd maximarum rerum molem tuo solus rotes pondere, non est cur illud miretur quisquam, quem non aut tua latuit virtus, quem fides, quem par negotiis omnibus animi vigor, et in arduis exploratissima promptitudo.

CHAP.
XII.

1790.

Talis ergo cum sis, ne pudeat te quòd noster nunc propinquius audias; quòd gravissimis imperii rebus cum satis inclarueris, inter literarum ornamenta recenseare, quòdque cum universo populo deberis, nos etiam te, partem jam nostri maximam, vindicare audeamus.—Neque enim tibi, si te benè novimus, illa non potest perplacere provincia, quâ præsidere literis quas semper coluisti, quâ patrocinari academiae quam adamasti adeo, quâ nobis demum præsidio esse possis, quibus olim fueras ornamento.

Sumus,

Vir honoratissime,

Tibi

Omni observantiâ, et studio

Devinctissimi,

Procancellarius

Reliquusque Senatus

Cantabrigiensis.

Datæ è Senaculo nostro }
5^{to} calend. Junii }
1790.

CHAPTER THE THIRTEENTH:

1790.

War in the North of Europe—Meeting of new Parliament—Spanish Convention—Expences of the late Armament—Continuation of Mr. Hastings's Trial—War in India—Russian Armament—Quebec Bill—Slave Trade—Finance Committee—Budget—Bill for the Relief of Protesting Roman Catholics—Prorogation.

CHAP.
XIII.

IT is now necessary to give a short account of the war, which had been for some time carried on in the north-east of Europe, and which we have seen noticed in several of the king's speeches, as at the period, at which we are arrived, there was a probability of England being actively involved in it.

Hostilities were commenced in the summer of 1787 by the Porte against Russia, in consequence of repeated encroachments on the part of the Russians, and their endeavours to excite disaffection and rebellion in Egypt, and other parts of the Turkish empire. The empress Catharine may therefore be considered as the real aggressor in this war, which, in fact, owed its origin to her desire to reduce the power of the Turks, and, if possible, to

wrest from them all their European dominions. A general belief, indeed, prevailed, that she aimed at nothing less than placing her second grandson upon the throne of Constantinople. Instead, however, of avowing any such design or wish, she prevailed upon Joseph the second, emperor of Germany, by the promise of the Turkish provinces contiguous to Hungary, to join in the war against Turkey, in the beginning of 1788; and the king of Sweden having declared war against Russia, in the middle of that year, the influence of the empress caused Denmark soon after to invade Sweden with a powerful army. It was evident, that Sweden could not have withstood the joint attacks of Russia and Denmark; and as the ruin of that kingdom would have materially affected the balance of power in the north, Great Britain and Prussia notified their intention to engage in the war, if Denmark did not withdraw her troops from Sweden: she consented, after some hesitation, in November of that year, and from that time remained neuter. This was more immediately owing to the spirited and judicious exertions of the English minister at Copenhagen*, acting under directions from his own government, and proved the importance of that alliance, which Mr. Pitt had

* Mr. Hugh Elliott.

CHAP.
XIII.

been so eager to form between Holland and the courts of London and Berlin, as a check to the ambition of the empress Catharine, which was the more to be dreaded, on account of the ascendancy she had gained over the emperor of Germany.

The war between Sweden and Russia continued till August 1790, when it was unexpectedly terminated by a treaty, the principal articles of which were, that the places taken on each side should be restored, and that the frontiers should be put exactly into the same state in which they were before the war. Peace was convenient to both parties: Sweden had suffered so much, particularly in her navy, that she was no longer able to maintain the contest; and Russia was desirous of being left at liberty to prosecute the Turkish war, with undivided attention, and with her whole military strength.

The armies of the Porte, although on several occasions they fought with great bravery, and with considerable success, especially against the Austrians in 1788, were by no means able to resist the united forces of the two empires, even while a part of Catharine's troops was employed against Sweden. The losses of the Turks in the campaign of 1789, both in men and territory, were indeed so

great, that apprehensions were entertained for the safety of Constantinople itself. The subversion, or even any considerable dismemberment, of the Turkish empire, would so obviously have operated to the disadvantage of the other nations of Europe, that the allied powers made a strong representation upon the subject, to the courts of Vienna and Petersburgh; and to shew that they were in earnest, the king of Prussia collected a large army, for the avowed purpose, if necessary, of assisting the Porte. These circumstances had probably great weight in inducing the emperor so far to listen to overtures of peace, made by the Ottomans, towards the end of 1789, that he agreed to the holding a congress at Bucharest, to conduct the negotiation; and the empress of Russia authorized prince Potemkin to propose terms of pacification to the Porte. This congress, however, entirely failed in all its objects; and the king of Prussia was so dissatisfied with the court of Vienna, and so impressed with the danger which must attend the farther progress of the imperial troops in the Turkish dominions, that, at the end of January 1790, he entered into a close alliance with the Ottoman Porte, and was upon the point of attacking the Austrian territories, when the death of the emperor, on

CHAP. the 20th of February in that year, produced
 XIII. a most material change in the situation of
 affairs.

Joseph dying without issue, his brother, Leopold, grand duke of Tuscany, succeeded to the hereditary dominions of the house of Austria; and the exhausted and unquiet state, in which he found them, soon convinced him of the necessity of accommodating all differences with the king of Prussia, and of putting an end to the war with Turkey. A congress was accordingly held at Reichenback in Silesia, composed of the respective ministers of Leopold, as king of Hungary, of the kings of Prussia and Great Britain, and of the States General; and, on the 27th of July 1790, a convention was signed, by which it was stipulated, that Austria should renounce her alliance with Russia, that a negotiation for peace between Austria and the Porte should be opened as soon as might be practicable, and that, in the mean time, hostilities should cease; and the king of Prussia engaged to give his vote in favor of Leopold, at the approaching election for the imperial throne, upon condition, that he should never form any alliance with Russia, which should prevent him, as chief of the empire, from resisting any attack of that power upon any of

the German states. The king of Prussia farther engaged to co-operate with the maritime powers, in their endeavors to appease the troubles in the Austrian Netherlands; but upon the express condition, that Leopold should restore to them all their antient privileges, which were to be confirmed and guaranteed by the three allied powers. The armistice between Austria and the Porte took place on the 20th of September, about which time Leopold was chosen emperor; and a few months afterwards the negotiations for peace commenced at Sistovia.

In December 1789, the empress of Russia applied to the courts of London and Berlin to exert their influence to prevail upon the Porte to allow, as a ground for a general peace, that the Turkish provinces of Bessarabia, Moldavia, and Wallachia, should be formed into an independent state, to be governed by a christian prince; and, it was understood, that she intended to name her own grandson, Constantine, as the sovereign of this new kingdom. The kings of Great Britain and Prussia replied that, earnestly as they desired the re-establishment of public tranquillity, it was impossible for them to support the condition of peace proposed by her imperial majesty, which was founded upon such a considerable exchange

CHAP.
XIII.

of territory, as could not fail essentially to affect the interests of various European powers, and appeared calculated rather to prolong, and even to extend, the war, than to put an end to its calamities. Catharine, convinced by this answer, that she should not be permitted to carry her ambitious plans into execution, without a struggle, and finding, soon after the death of the emperor Joseph, that she could not expect any assistance from his successor, thought it expedient to relinquish, for the present, the idea of a new independent principality, and offered to make peace with the Porte, upon the general principle of the status quo, retaining only Oczakow, which she had taken from the Turks in 1788, and the country lying between the Bog and the Niester; but as the possession of that fortress, and of the territory between those two rivers, would have added materially to the power of the Russians upon the Black Sea, and might hereafter have opened an easy way to Constantinople, from which Oczakow was distant only 190 miles, not a single strong place intervening, the British government did not hesitate to pronounce this proposal also to be inadmissible. The empress, offended at the repeated rejection of her overtures, refused to join the conferences for peace at Reichenback, under the media-

tion of the allies; haughtily declaring, that she would suffer no foreign interference between herself and the Porte, and that she would continue the war, rather than resign the fruit of all her victories. The British ministers were not discouraged by this language; and Mr. Fawkener was sent to Petersburg, to try the effect of negotiation.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

THE new Parliament met on the 26th of November; and the king began his speech from the throne, by expressing his satisfaction, that the differences, which had arisen between him and the court of Spain, had been brought to an amicable termination, without any actual interruption of the blessings of peace. He then proceeded to state, that since the last session, a foundation had been laid for a pacification between Austria and the Porte; that negotiations were depending, under his mediation, in conjunction with his allies, for a definitive treaty between those powers, and also for putting an end to the dissensions in the Netherlands; that a separate peace had taken place between Russia and Sweden; but that the war between Russia and the Porte still continued.

He acquainted the house of commons, that he had ordered the expences of the late ar-

mament, and the estimates for the ensuing year to be laid before them; and at the end of his speech, after noticing the hostilities which had broken out in India, he called the particular attention of parliament to the state of the province of Quebec.

The usual address of thanks to his majesty, passed in the house of commons without any opposition; and on the 3d of December, Mr. Pitt presented copies of the declaration and counter-declaration exchanged at Madrid, on the 24th of July, and of the convention signed at the Escorial, on the 28th of October, together with an account of the expences incurred by the late armament. These subjects gave rise to the first debates in the present session.

UPON Mr. Pitt's proposing a day for taking into consideration the Spanish convention, Mr. Fox, and some of his friends, asserted, that the papers before the house were not sufficient to enable parliament to form a judgment upon that transaction: they contended, that it was not enough to see the treaty itself, and called upon Mr. Pitt to communicate to the house, every part of the previous negotiation. Mr. Pitt, however, declined to lay before the house any other papers; and there-

fore Mr. Grey, on the 13th of December, moved for the production of the whole correspondence, which had passed between the courts of Great Britain and Spain; and between the British government at home, and his majesty's ambassador at Madrid, relative to the seizure of the ships at Nootka, and the satisfaction demanded for that act of violence. This motion was followed by a long debate, at the end of which, Mr. Pitt, in replying to Mr. Fox, remarked, that the constitution had wisely entrusted the management of all foreign negotiations to the crown, reserving to parliament the privilege of censuring or commending every description of treaty; and, as a proof that it was not the uniform practice of the house of commons, to require all the proceedings of a negotiation to be submitted to them, he reminded Mr. Fox, that he had joined in a vote of censure upon the peace, in 1783, and had since applauded the treaties respecting Holland, without desiring to be informed of the detail of either negotiation. He complained, that Mr. Fox had chosen to construe a refusal of papers in this particular instance, where their production was not necessary, into an unconstitutional determination to deny them in all. No part of his conduct, he said, warranted such an inference; and he

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

knew not, whether he should give a severer wound to the constitution in saying, that papers should be called for in all cases, or in none. He admitted the general right of parliament to inquire into the conduct of every department of the executive government; but this right was not to be exercised, except upon proper occasions, and upon sufficient grounds. It was evident, that every negotiation of considerable length, might involve particulars most unfit to be disclosed; and the knowledge of which would only gratify curiosity, without answering any useful purpose. It was beneath the dignity of the house, and inconsistent with its legitimate functions, to scrutinize the technical forms of a diplomatic correspondence; but the result was a fit subject for its examination and judgment. In the present instance, ministers had succeeded in the objects they had in view, without incurring the evils of war; and the conditions of the treaty would shew, whether, in the attainment of this end, either the honor or the interest of the country had been sacrificed. It was of no national importance, whether this or that letter or memorial had been expressed in the best possible terms—the only point to be considered was, whether the convention itself deserved censure or approba-

tion; and that question the house was fully competent to decide, from the papers already upon the table. No one had stated any ground of suspicion, that there had been neglect or mismanagement in the negotiation; and the dispute being terminated, it was far better not to run the risque of reviving it, or of giving offence to the court of Madrid, by publishing all which had passed at the moment of complaint and irritation, when the two countries were apparently upon the eve of a war; and more especially, as a prospect was now opened of entering into a friendly intercourse with that power. The production of the papers required, might also reveal circumstances relative to the disposition and intention of other courts, which ought in propriety to be concealed; and, if divulged, might lead to future and serious mischief. These arguments prevailed with the house; and the motion was rejected by a majority of 124, the numbers being 258 and 134.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

On the following day a motion was made by Mr. Duncombe, one of the members for Yorkshire, and seconded by Mr. alderman Watson, one of the members for the city of London, for presenting to his majesty an address of congratulation, on the satisfactory issue of the late negotiation with Spain. This

CHAP. motion was objected to, and an adjournment
 XIII moved, upon the ground, that, papers neces-
 1790. sary for information having been refused, it
 would be equally improper for the house to
 express either praise or disapprobation. To
 this it was again replied, that the character of
 the measure did not depend on the detail of
 the negotiation, but upon the actual result;
 and it was contended, that the convention,
 while it continued to these kingdoms the
 blessings of peace, maintained the honor of
 his majesty's crown, by providing an adequate
 reparation for the violence and injury com-
 mitted, secured to his majesty's subjects the
 acknowledgment and exercise of valuable
 rights, which had been long resisted and
 disputed, and by an amicable and clear ar-
 rangement precluded future occasions of mis-
 understanding with the court of Spain. The
 motion for adjournment was negatived by
 a majority of 124, and the address was agreed
 to without any farther division.

IMMEDIATELY after the meeting of parlia-
 ment, Mr. Pitt had declared his intention of
 keeping the expences of the late armament
 distinct from the current expences of the ensu-
 ing year; and Mr. Fox, who approved this idea,
 inquired, on the day the navy estimates were

voted, whether the expence of the increased number of seamen from 20,000 to 24,000, was to be imputed to the late armament, or to an alteration in the policy of the country, with respect to what was deemed the necessary peace establishment. Mr. Pitt replied, that part of the expence of the increased number of seamen might fairly be ascribed to the late armament, inasmuch as it was impossible to disarm all at once: he did not, however, mean to say, that the proposed number of seamen was solely owing to that cause: he made no scruple to declare, that there were circumstances in the present situation of Europe, which occasioned his majesty's ministers to think it necessary to keep up a naval armament for a time, to an increased extent; but he trusted, that a few months would bring that necessity to a period. Mr. Fox expressed himself satisfied with this candid explanation.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

All the different expences incurred by the late armament, including the additional number of seamen voted for the service of the following year, amounted to 3,133,000*l.*, every part of which, Mr. Pitt, after a full consideration of the financial state of the country, determined to defray, without entailing any permanent charge upon the revenue. To

CHAP. raise so large a sum within a short period, in-
 XIII. evitably required the imposition of heavy
 1790. taxes; but this unpleasant task he willingly
 undertook, from a desire of affording to the
 world a substantial proof of the resources of
 the country, and of the readiness of the
 people to submit to burdens, which the vindi-
 cation of the national honor had rendered
 necessary; and to this he was further en-
 couraged, by an earnest wish not to interfere
 with the operation of the sinking fund. In-
 stead, therefore, of having recourse to a loan,
 and providing permanent taxes for the pay-
 ment of the interest only, in the manner prac-
 tised by all other ministers since the revolution,
 he proposed to discharge the principal within
 four years, by the assistance of taxes, the du-
 ration of which should be confined to that
 limited time; and the day after the address
 of congratulation was voted, he submitted to
 the house a plan for carrying into effect this
 spirited and patriotic determination.

After explaining the principle, and expa-
 tiating upon the advantage of the object he
 had in view, he stated that there was lying in
 the bank a considerable sum, of which par-
 liament might with propriety avail itself upon
 the present occasion. Money, he said, was
 issued from the exchequer to the bank every

quarter, for the payment of the whole of the dividends upon the public stocks then due; but, some of the proprietors omitting to call for their respective dividends, a balance always remained in the bank, which, on the 12th of last October, amounted to 660,000*l.* He observed, that the governor and company of the bank stood in the situation of agents to the public; and receiving for their agency a competent allowance, they were not entitled to any indirect profit from a balance to be left in their hands, greater than was sufficient to meet the demands which might be made upon them. He, therefore, thought it fair to apply 500,000*l.* of the above balance towards the discharge of the debt incurred by the late armament; and, that the public creditor might not be exposed to any loss or inconvenience, he proposed to make the consolidated fund responsible for those dividends, whenever they should be demanded: the probability, however, was, that the balance, instead of becoming less, would continue to increase, as it had hitherto done *. The effect of this measure would be, that the public would have the im-

CHAP.
XIII.
1790

* In 1727, the balance was 43,000*l.*; in 1774 it was 292,000*l.*; in 1786, it was 314,000*l.*; on the 5th of July 1789, it was 547,000*l.*; and, after the Christmas recess, Mr. Pitt stated that on the 8th of January preceding it was 702 995*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*

CHAP. XII. 4790. immediate use of half a million without interest, the proprietors of stock still retaining the same security for the regular payment of their dividends *.

Mr. Pitt then proceeded to state the means by which he intended to raise the remainder of the 3,133,000*l.*, which consisted of a temporary increase of the present taxes upon sugar, British and foreign spirits, malt, game licences, and of what were called assessed taxes, except the commutation and land taxes: the whole annual produce of these additional taxes he estimated at 728,000*l.*; and he proposed, that part of them should continue for two, and part for four years. He proposed also to introduce a variety of important regulations, to prevent the evasions and frauds practised in the taxes upon receipts and bills of exchange, which he intended to make perpetual, and from which he expected an addition to the revenue, of 300,000*l.* a year. He considered himself as providing, by these different methods, an augmentation to the income of the country, which would pay off

* On a subsequent day Mr. Pitt mentioned, that he had carefully looked over the state of cash in the exchequer, for the last five years; and in all that time there were only two weeks, when the ready money there did not exceed half a million. These weeks were during the king's illness.

more than half the debt in question, with the accruing interest, in the next two years, and the remainder in the two following ; so that all the expences of the armament would be discharged within four years, at the end of which the new taxes would entirely cease.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

This proposal for liquidating the whole of the debt, both principal and interest, within so short a period, was highly applauded by persons on both sides of the house; and every part of the plan was adopted, except that, instead of taking a proportion of the unclaimed dividends, the directors of the bank agreed to lend to the public, half a million without interest, so long as a floating balance to that amount should remain in their hands. This alteration, while it equally answered Mr. Pitt's purpose, and was equally advantageous to the public, removed the scruples of some few members, who were fearful, that the national credit might suffer by a direct and avowed application of money to the public service, which in fact belonged to individual stockholders, and might be demanded at any moment.

When the speaker presented the bills for these various purposes, to the king, he noticed the novel principle, upon which they were founded, in the following words :

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

“ A large part of this supply has been granted for the purpose of carrying into execution, a measure, the principle of which has received the unanimous approbation of your commons.

“ Actuated by a generous and wise policy, they have sacrificed the considerations of temporary convenience, to those which arise from a just regard to the permanent interests of these kingdoms. They have accordingly provided for the complete and speedy discharge of the expences recently incurred, in support of the honor and dignity of your majesty’s crown, and the rights of your subjects, without any lasting addition to the national debt, or any embarrassment to that system, which has so effectually sustained and advanced the public credit of the country.

“ Your commons, sire, are induced to hope, that their conduct on this occasion, will operate as a salutary example to future times ; and that its immediate effect will be, to establish an universal conviction of the internal strength and abundant resources of this country ; and consequently to afford an additional security for the continuance of the blessings of peace.—A measure, which is the result of such motives, and which leads to such conse-

quences, your commons are persuaded, cannot fail to receive your majesty's most gracious approbation."

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

A constitutional question of considerable importance, arising out of the trial of Mr. Hastings, was also discussed in the house of commons, before the Christmas holidays, namely, Whether a dissolution of parliament put an end to an impeachment by the house of commons, before the house of lords? Upon the determination of this question it depended, whether the proceedings against Mr. Hastings could be taken up by the present parliament, where they were left by the last, or whether they must begin *de novo*. It was understood, that opposite opinions were entertained upon this subject, especially by those members who belonged to the profession of the law; and, as the best means of bringing the point to a regular decision, Mr. Burke, on the 17th of December, in a committee of the whole house, moved the following resolution:—
 “ That it appears, that an impeachment by this house, in the name of the commons of Great Britain in parliament assembled, and of all the commons of Great Britain, against Warren Hastings, esq. late governor general of Bengal, for sundry high crimes and misdemea-

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

nors, is now depending." Mr. Burke observed, that this was not an abstract, but a practical, proposition, applicable to the particular case; it was a plain assertion of the privileges of the house, as handed down to them by their predecessors, through an uninterrupted succession of 500 years, and to be faithfully transmitted to all future generations. In all the convulsions of our government, in all the struggles, contests, and incidental or progressive changes of the functions and powers of the house of commons, this alone had remained immutable, that an impeachment was never to be defeated by collusion with a minister, or by the power of the crown. That an impeachment abated by a dissolution of parliament, was not to be found, in plain express terms, on the journals of the house of lords, on the journals of the house of commons, or in the minutes of the conferences between the two houses. It was as little to be found in any book of authority, or in any good report of law cases. The house of commons was the watch, the inquisitor, the purifier of every judicial and executive function; and were this privilege to be abandoned, or rendered nugatory, we should lose the best security for the impartial administration of justice, and the most powerful check against the abuse of political power.

This resolution gave rise to a debate of unusual length *, and afforded an opportunity for the display of great ingenuity and research. Mr. Erskine immediately followed Mr. Burke; and, at the end of a long and elaborate speech, in which he attempted to prove, principally from the practice of the courts of law, and from what he termed legal analogies, that a dissolution did put an end to all proceedings of a depending impeachment, he moved, that the chairman should leave the chair, for the purpose of appointing a select committee to search for precedents, to be formally reported to the house, as a necessary guide to their ultimate decision.

After several members had spoken on both sides, Mr. Pitt took a comprehensive view of the question, upon the grounds of precedent, the principles of the constitution, and the authority of eminent lawyers; noticing, as he went on, the arguments and objections of those who had preceded him in the debate.

He began by observing, that precedents had been consulted by several honorable and learned gentlemen, with the laborious industry, no doubt, of many months investigation; but those adduced, in favor of impeachments abating upon a dissolution of parliament, were

* The debate lasted, by adjournments, three days.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

in number so few, and of such questionable authority, in his opinion, as clearly to evince the weakness of the cause, without the smallest reflection upon the abilities of the learned advocates, who supported it. After the most diligent and accurate examination in his power, of the subject under discussion—after deliberating, for a length of time, upon every possible ground on which it could be argued—he came prepared to deliver his sentiments, how far impeachments were affected by a dissolution of parliament.

The first point to be ascertained was, he said, whether any evidence existed of an uniform practice observed by both houses, in their conduct of impeachments, which might be considered as the law of parliament in such cases. If there were precedents, which clearly established the point, that, from the usage of parliament, impeachments did abate by a dissolution, he would bow in silence to the authority; but would lose no time in providing a remedy against a practice, the tendency of which was hostile to the privileges of the house, and destructive of the liberties of the country. No one would say, that such precedents ought to be relied upon, in preference to the fundamental principles of the constitution. But he was happy to find, that there

existed no evidence of such uniform rule of parliamentary practice. From a dispassionate examination of the different precedents, he did not hesitate to assert with confidence, and the sequel, he trusted, would abundantly justify the assertion, that impeachments did continue in statu quo from parliament to parliament.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

That impeachments did not abate by a dissolution of parliament, was a doctrine sufficiently recognized and well established, by many early precedents in our history*. Cases might be adduced from the reigns of Richard the second, and his immediate successors; but he should only mention the case of the duke of Suffolk, in the reign of Henry the sixth, from which it appeared, that impeachments were then considered as continuing from parliament to parliament. In his reference, however, to precedents, he did not mean to confine himself to the more doubtful decisions of antiquity; but should advance to more modern times, and advert to instances

* The earliest formal entry of an impeachment is that of lord Latimer, in the roll of the parliament which met in the 50th year of the reign of Edw. 3: this was denominated "the good parliament;" and deservedly, says Walsingham, who lived before the genuine impression of its conduct was worn away. His *Hypodeigma Neustriæ* was published in 1418, and his history a few years afterwards.

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

better ascertained, and more immediately applicable to his present purpose.

In the year 1673, the house of lords directed the committee of privileges to consider, “ whether an appeal, either by writ of error or petition, being depending, and not determined in one session of parliament, continue in statu quo, to the next session of parliament, without renewing the writ of error or petition ;” and the committee, not confining themselves to appeals, but extending their inquiries to “ any other business wherein their lordships act as in a court of judicature, and not in their legislative capacity,” declared their opinion in a resolution, which was approved by the house, “ That businesses depending in one session of parliament, have been continued to the next session of the same parliament, and the proceedings thereupon have remained in the same state, in which they were left when last in agitation.” It is to be observed, that this resolution pronounced, what had been the usage of the house of lords, after a careful examination into the journals, with respect both to criminal and civil cases, many of which were cited at length in the report ; and that it included impeachments, although not actually mentioned, in hearing of which the house of

lords unquestionably acted as a court of judicature.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

Though the report itself was confined to the same parliament, several cases were cited in it, of business continued through different parliaments; but in the year 1678, soon after the dissolution of the long parliament, the committee of privileges were expressly called upon to “to consider, whether petitions of appeal, which were presented to the house of lords in the last parliament, be still in force to be proceeded on; as also to consider of the state of the impeachment brought up in the last parliament:” and in their report they stated, “that all cases of appeal and writs of error continue, and are to be proceeded upon in statu quo, as they stood at the dissolution of the last parliament, without beginning de novo; and that the dissolution of the last parliament doth not alter the state of the impeachment brought up by the commons in that parliament*.”

To this precedent, thus clear and decisive, three objections, Mr. Pitt said, had been taken to invalidate its authority.—First, it had been denominated a very precipitate proceeding, but of this no proof had been adduced; and indeed the report itself was only

* That of lord viscount Stafford, who, in consequence of this report, was tried, convicted, and executed.

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

an obvious deduction from the principles laid down in the former decision; and it was expressly mentioned, that the house agreed to the report, "after some time spent in consideration thereof."

Secondly, it had been objected, that the critical juncture of affairs, during the ferment of party violence, occasioned by what was called the popish plot, probably contributed to that part of the report, and consequent resolution of the house, which authorized the continuance of impeachments. The circumstances, however, of the times did not appear to detract from the weight of any part of this report, which was adopted by the unanimous and deliberate judgment of the house, and was professedly founded upon the resolution of 1673, which had no reference to any depending impeachment, and was never suspected of originating from political prejudice, or any other improper motive. But what was the case of the reversal of this decision in 1685, so much relied upon as a precedent in favor of the abatement of impeachments by a dissolution? Did not that reversal take place at the era, when James the second, a popish and bigoted prince, had just ascended the throne; when the parliament was obsequiously devoted to the will of the monarch;

when the sacrifice of principle was required to be made to practical abuse ; when certain popish lords, the supposed favorites of the king, were in prison, and about to be tried in the new parliament, under the authority of the law, as it was then understood and acknowledged, that impeachments were not affected by a dissolution ? And how did the house of lords act at such a moment ? They rescinded the order of 1678 as far as impeachments were concerned, avowedly for the purpose of screening the popish lords from the impending danger of trial, without any examination into precedents, or even suffering the order itself to be read ; and this resolution of 1685 was held in so little repute, that it was never quoted or acted upon, after its immediate purpose was answered. He then would ask, against which of the decisions the objection taken from the circumstances of the times, applied most forcibly, whether to the order of 1678, or to its reversal in 1685 ? Unquestionably to the latter. The honorable and learned gentleman (Mr. Erskine) had therefore ably and successfully argued against himself, since by this objection he had clearly proved the decision itself a good precedent, and its reversal a bad one. So much for the precedent of 1685.

The last objection to the resolution of 1678, was taken from the case of lord Stafford, whose trial, conviction, and execution, the same honorable gentleman had so feelingly described. But how could this instance affect the authority of the precedent in question? Admitting that this unfortunate nobleman was unjustly condemned, was that a legitimate and conclusive argument against the principle of continuing impeachments? Because the fate of one person, from the continuance of impeachments, was hard and oppressive, did it therefore follow, that the exercise of such a privilege of the commons would, in every instance be attended with the same obnoxious consequences? If the abuse of an institution proved its inutility, the objection might apply; otherwise the honorable and learned gentleman's pathetic expostulations would deserve no attention; for, in deciding upon the weight of a dry precedent, our passions ought not to interfere with our judicial deliberations; and it was obvious, that the trial might be undertaken upon legal grounds, although the witnesses, examined in the prosecution of it, were guilty of perjury. The credit of the order of 1678 stood, therefore, unimpeached: a precedent, which neither eloquence nor sophistry could possibly invalidate.

The detention of lord Salisbury and lord Peterborough in prison, in 1690, after a dissolution, and several months after the meeting of the new parliament, proved, that the resolution of 1685 was not considered as laying down a permanent rule of law, but as an expedient merely to serve a temporary and improper purpose. In the proceedings relative to those peers, no reference whatever was made to any former decision upon the subject; and their impeachment abated, not by virtue of any usage of parliament, but by the operation of an act of general pardon*.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

In the cases of sir Adam Blair, and three other persons, in the same year, 1690, it was true that no attempts were made to go on with the prosecutions in the new parliament; but they had been held to bail subsequently

* There was much dispute before the revolution, concerning the king's power to pardon, in case of parliamentary impeachment. To remove all doubt upon the subject, it was enacted by the act of settlement, 12 and 13 Will. 3, c. 2, that "no pardon under the great seal of England shall be pleadable to an impeachment by the commons in parliament." "But," says Blackstone, "after the impeachment has been solemnly heard and determined, it is not understood, that the king's royal grace is farther restrained or abridged; for, after the impeachment and attainder of the six rebel lords in 1715, three of them were from time to time reprieved by the crown, and at length received the benefit of the king's most gracious pardon."

CHAP. to a dissolution. If the proceedings had
 XIII. abated in consequence of that event, the par-
 1790. ties could not have been held to bail : the im-
 peachment being determined, they must have
 been liberated. But as the proceedings were
 considered as still pending, unaffected by the
 dissolution, the parties were bound in a re-
 cognizance. The only just inference, there-
 fore, from these cases was, that impeachments
 did not abate, in the manner contended for,
 by a dissolution of parliament.

The same conclusion was deducible from
 the impeachment of lord Danby, who was not
 discharged till three dissolutions had taken
 place. It might here again be observed, that
 if a dissolution had produced an abatement of
 impeachments, he must have been released
 from prison, as a matter of course, upon the
 first dissolution. On the contrary, after this
 first dissolution, he applied to the court of
 king's bench to be bailed ; but the judges
 then refused, recognizing the doctrine, that
 the impeachment did not fall to the ground in
 consequence of the dissolution, as the known
 and established law of parliament. The judges
 refused to bail him a second time ; but, upon
 a third application, after five years imprison-
 ment, in 1684, when Jefferies had become
 chief justice, he was bailed ; which very act

admitted the legality of his being detained in prison, and the continuance of the impeachment; and he was at length discharged, because the commons declined to prosecute, without a word being said of any of the intermediate dissolutions.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

In the subsequent cases of lords Somers, Halifax, Portland, and the same lord Danby, when duke of Leeds, the several impeachments dropped from the same cause; the commons not prosecuting, the parties were severally discharged. In the last-mentioned case, that of the duke of Leeds, after the impeachment had remained five years, and through several successive parliaments, the lords came to this resolution, that "the commons not prosecuting, the impeachment and articles shall be and are hereby dismissed;" again passing over in silence the resolution of 1685, as worthy of no notice, and implying that the commons might, at that time, have prosecuted the duke upon the articles presented in the former parliament, if they had been so disposed.

On which side of the question, then, did the weight of evidence from precedents, preponderate? Did not the scale fairly incline in favor of the continuance of impeachments from parliament to parliament? The authority

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

of such a body of precedents, in his opinion, clearly, unequivocally, and indisputably established the right of the commons to prosecute an impeachment, until judgment should be obtained, notwithstanding the intervention of a dissolution.

From this review of the evidence to be collected from precedents, Mr. Pitt passed to the consideration of the established principles of the constitution; remarking, that the doubts upon the present question had chiefly arisen, from confounding the two different powers of parliament, legislative and judicial, each of which had its separate and distinct limits of duration. Every depending act of legislation, it was well known, was terminated by prorogation as well as by dissolution; but no judicial act was influenced by either. Impeachment, therefore, being a judicial proceeding, could not be affected by prorogation or dissolution. In the case of writs of error and of petitions of appeal, the process continued from session to session, and from parliament to parliament; much more necessary was it, that the proceedings in an impeachment should also continue; for, in the former case, there was only one individual against another, upon a question of a private nature; but in the latter, the house of commons, and all the

commons of Great Britain were parties against a state delinquent, in whose conviction the public was interested. To admit the continuance of writs of error and of appeals, and to insist upon the abatement of impeachments by the operation of a dissolution, would be the grossest absurdity; since, as judicial proceedings, they were branches of the same power, and their connexion depended upon a permanent union of principle.

The impeachment in question, Mr. Pitt contended, was not merely the act of the late parliament, but of the whole commons of the realm, the proceedings being in the name both of constituents and of representatives. It had been asked, if the house of commons, in this instance were the attornies of the people? In one sense they were, since they might be considered as agents, consulting their own judgment and discretion, in the protection of the interests of their constituents. But they were not the attornies of the people, as agents delegated with power to act merely by the instruction of their constituents. Such an acceptance of the term must have his heartiest abhorrence and detestation. An impeachment had been commenced by the commons of England, in the persons of their late representatives; and their present representatives

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

stood in a situation similar to that of the successor of the king's attorney general, who was always required to proceed with all the trials already commenced on the part of the king. It had, however, been objected, that no such body as the commons of England was recognized in law: but how could that be pretended, when our ancestors, with their accustomed wisdom, and as it were to guard against such a solecism in politics, had ordered all supplies to be granted in the name of the commons, as well as all impeachments to be laid in their name, as a permanent body? When once a proceeding of this kind assumed a judicial form, its existence no longer depended upon the individuals who were immediately concerned as instruments in its institution; and it was obvious, that the ends of justice required, that a criminal trial should not be terminated by any thing short of the acquittal or conviction of the person accused. The house of commons was only the legal organ of instituting impeachments in the name of the commons of the realm, as the attorney general was of filing an information *ex officio*, in the name of the king. The public prosecutors in the one case were the commons of the realm, and the king was the prosecutor in the other. From the consideration, therefore, of the

capacity in which the house, as a judicial and not a legislative body, acted in the conduct of impeachments, it followed that their proceedings could not abate, or be affected, either by a prorogation or by a dissolution of parliament. It was evident, that the contrary doctrine would greatly interrupt the course of public justice, and might eventually tend to subvert our excellent constitution. The power of impeachment was a privilege of primary importance to the liberties of the country; it operated as a salutary restraint upon those in administration, and effectually guarded against every undue influence of the crown in the protection of state delinquency. Ought then the result of an impeachment to depend upon the operation of a dissolution? If it did, there would be an end to official responsibility: the most flagrant acts of corruption, oppression, and injustice would pass with impunity; for the party impeached might procure, by his own interest or that of his friends, a dissolution of parliament, in order to escape the punishment his offences might justly deserve. The abatement of impeachments, therefore, by a dissolution of parliament, would throw an insurmountable obstacle in the way of public justice, and would deprive the house of a power the most formidable to

CHAF.

XIII.

1790.

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

a corrupt administration, the exercise of which served as a shield and bulwark to the constitution.

Mr. Pitt pressed this point farther, by shewing, that the necessity of beginning again, in a new parliament, the proceedings of an impeachment, which had already been carried to a considerable length, might, in a variety of respects, accidentally become the cause, or designedly be converted into an engine, of oppression and injustice to individuals. The death of a witness might materially affect the state of the evidence; or, if the party impeached had made some progress in his defence, his enemies might possess sufficient influence to procure a sudden dissolution of parliament, the consequence of which might be, a fresh accusation against him, framed out of his own defence. It was obvious, also, that by repeated dissolutions, a person might become the object of a public prosecution all his life, without the possibility of obtaining a sentence, either of acquittal or of condemnation. The grand principle, therefore, of Magna Charta, "*Nulli differemus justitiam*," of guarding against long imprisonments, and all the miseries belonging to a tedious state of suspense, would be far more promoted by the continuance, than by the abatement, of impeach-

ments. The accused party would, in such case, be at full liberty to establish his innocence, without any unnecessary expence or delay ; and the accuser would have every fair opportunity of making good his charges. Nothing short of this could deserve the name of public justice.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

It had been said, that in a long impeachment, in consequence of the constant change in the house of lords, many persons might have a right to give judgment, who were not members of the court at the beginning of the trial ; and even those, who were at first accusers, might at the end become judges. To which Mr. Pitt replied, that there was no period of prorogation, to which the same objection did not apply ; it was inseparable from a court of hereditary judges, and unavoidably incidental to the nature of such a proceeding as an impeachment : from hence, however, no danger of injustice could, with any shadow of reason, be apprehended. It was impossible to deprive peers of their judicial powers ; but, under any circumstances, the exercise and application of those powers might be safely left to their own feelings and consciences. Peers, who had succeeded to their seats, while a trial was depending, might refer to the printed evidence, which, indeed, the length of trials

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

by impeachment generally rendered necessary even to those, who had been present from the commencement of the proceedings; or they might, without any impropriety, abstain from voting. It should be recollected, that an impeachment was an extraordinary case; and that the principal object in establishing the high court of parliament was, to bring delinquents to justice, who might have escaped, if tried according to the ordinary rules of courts of judicature. It was, therefore, essential to the original design of this institution, that the mode of conducting trials before the house of lords should be peculiar to itself; and any objection, founded on the practice of the inferior courts, was irrelevant, and undeserving of attention.

Mr. Pitt lastly adverted to the opinions of eminent lawyers. The authority of the great and venerable lord Hale, was, he said, to be distrusted in the present instance, because, as Mr. Pitt proved, by quoting a passage from his works, he considered writs of error, petitions of appeal, and impeachments, to be legislative, and not judicial, proceedings; and this error led him to infer, that they all abated by a dissolution. A different opinion was entertained by lord Holt, who adduced the case of lord Stafford, as a weighty and irrefra-

gable precedent, in favor of the continuance of impeachments, and other judicial proceedings from one parliament to another. Lord chief baron Comyns, an authority of the highest respectability, was, also, decidedly of the same opinion; for he maintained, as appeared from a passage in his digest, not only that impeachments continued, but that they should be resumed, and prosecuted until judgment was obtained, notwithstanding any contingent interruption from either prorogation or dissolution. He added, that many cases might be adduced from Carthew's Reports, and other authorities, which abundantly proved, that it had been long held, that impeachments were not affected by a dissolution.

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

Mr. Pitt concluded, by declaring his firm conviction, that the weight of precedents, the true spirit of the constitution, the immutable principles of justice, the expediency of public trials, every argument of plain common sense, and the authority of the greatest luminaries of the law, all concurred to prove, that impeachments did not abate in consequence of a dissolution of parliament, but remained in statu quo; and therefore, as he did not consider it necessary to search farther for precedents, he should cheerfully vote for the

CHAP. original motion, " That the impeachment of
XIII. Warren Hastings, esq. is now depending."

1790.

Mr. Fox, upon this occasion, entirely coincided with Mr. Pitt, and paid him a high compliment for the very able manner in which he had discussed the subject, particularly for his forcible statement of precedents. The question was, he said, of great importance—no less than, whether the constitution was a free constitution, under which every act of government was open to inquiry, and accompanied with responsibility ; or, whether power might be exercised without any effectual control, and without any national inquest to take cognizance of its abuse. Next to the free-born spirit of the people, the right of impeachment, proceeding without abatement from session to session, and from parliament to parliament, was the best security for the undisturbed enjoyment of their lives and liberties, and was the only peaceable protection against the vices and corruption of the government ; it was the vital, the defensive, principle of the constitution, that which preserved it from internal decay, that which guarded it against external injury ; without which every office of executive power, every function of judicial authority, might be properly exercised, or abused, at the discretion or caprice of him

who held it, or of him who had the right of appointing to it. He rested chiefly upon this general principle, that whatever was inconsistent with, or subversive of, a free constitution, could make no part of the law under that constitution; and it appeared to him impossible, that the British constitution could be maintained, unless the house of commons possessed the right of bringing an impeachment to a conclusion, without any restraint or interference, direct or indirect, from the crown.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

After expressing his astonishment at the futility of the arguments on the opposite side, particularly those which had been adduced by professional members, he took a short review of the precedents; and asserted, that all, except that of 1685, made against the abatement of an impeachment by dissolution, and had been so understood by the courts of justice, and by the most eminent law authorities of the several periods. In enforcing the resolution of 1678, he said, that the times, in which it passed, were, as to parliamentary law, and in a constitutional point of view, unexceptionably good—indeed, the very period, at which, according to Mr. justice Blackstone, the theory of the constitution had reached its utmost perfection. This resolution did not

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

make the law, but declared what the law was, after the most diligent research, and the most mature deliberation. He observed, that by the act of 1773, for inquiring into offences committed in India, it was provided, that various parliamentary proceedings, necessary for that purpose, should continue from session to session, and from parliament to parliament, but not a word was said of impeachments. This was no casual omission, but an omission upon principle, to which he pledged, not his opinion, but his veracity. It was in the contemplation of the framers of that act, to include impeachments; but, upon the advice of the late Mr. Dyson, whose knowledge of the law of parliament had never been questioned, and after full consideration by persons most competent to judge upon such a point, they were designedly omitted, lest the insertion of them should be interpreted into an indirect admission, that a doubt was entertained, whether the commons possessed the right of going on with an impeachment, after a dissolution.

The question respecting the continuance of impeachments having been pronounced in the course of the debate, the most important one to the liberty of Englishmen, which had been agitated during the present century, it may

be proper to give a short account of the principal arguments and observations of the other members, who took part in the discussion.

CHAR.
XIII.
1790.

It was remarked, that the writers, who had recorded the transactions of the reign of Charles the second, supplied no information relative to the origin of the resolution of 1673; but what was sought for in vain in the histories of the times, might be found in the law books. It appeared from the law reporters, that between the restoration and that year, many cases respecting the operation of prorogation and dissolution on writs of error and appeals, had taken place; doubts had arisen; courts did not know how to decide; and therefore, the resolution of 1673 must have been a rule to settle those doubts; a rule taking its rise not out of party agitation, or political spirit, but out of mere questions of private right and private property, uninfluenced by prejudice or passion of any kind. It was the result of calm and deliberate inquiry, by a committee specially commanded to search into the usage and law of parliament, concerning appeals and writs of error; and though its report was confined to those subjects, it established a general principle applicable to all judicial proceedings before the high court of parliament. And what did this wise and

CHAP.
XIII.

1790.

temperate resolution, originating in peace, not springing from discord, mark out? That the court of the king in parliament was a constantly existing court; that its judicial proceedings were not touched by the exertion of prorogation or dissolution, but remained entire and undisturbed. Until the reign of Henry the fourth, criminal proceedings before the house of lords, at the suit of individuals, were legal, and not uncommon; and they sometimes continued from session to session; which, in those early times, was the same thing as from parliament to parliament, there being no prorogation on record before Philip & Mary.

The resolution of 1678 was so decidedly in favor of the continuance of impeachments, that several persons were anxious to vindicate and extol the parliament in which it passed. It was observed, that a parliament was to be judged of, not by the character of the times, but by its own acts in its legislative and deliberative capacity; and thus considered, it would be found, that there was not an important or material privilege of personal freedom, parliamentary independence, or constitutional principle, established at the revolution, of which the germ and seed were not to be traced to the parliament of 1678. That parliament passed the Habeas Corpus act; that

parliament resisted lord Shaftsbury, who, as chancellor, had attempted to regain the power of trying elections, and judging of the right of members to their seats, and thus fixed that invaluable privilege in the house of commons for ever; that parliament resolved, not on precedent and record, but on the clear and unalienable rights of a free constitution, and the first principles of the independence of the inquisitorial power of the house of commons, without which inquisitorial power would be a mockery, that a pardon was not pleadable in bar of an impeachment, and that a lord high steward, an officer to be named by the crown, was not a necessary part of the court of the king in parliament; and lastly, that parliament completed the great work of the inquisitorial power being independent of the prerogative, by deciding, on just and sound principles of precedent and law, that a dissolution did not annul an impeachment. The resolution of 1678 was, therefore, the resolution of a parliament, whose reputation stood as high for sound constitutional doctrine, as any in the annals of our history; and next to that which settled the revolution, and that which seated the house of Brunswick on the throne, deserved more of posterity than any parliament on record.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790.

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

In addition to the precedents and authorities adduced by Mr. Pitt, it was mentioned, that the popish lords, when under imprisonment, after a dissolution of parliament, petitioned the king, that they might be tried immediately by indictment; but the twelve judges unanimously declared, at the council table, that "the impeachment being lodged in parliament, no other prosecution could be instituted against the lords, till the prosecution of the commons was determined;" directly implying, that the impeachments had not abated by the intervening dissolution; and, at the opening of the new parliament in 1678, the lord chancellor*, concurring in that opinion, recommended, in the king's name, that those peers should be speedily brought to trial. These events shewed, that the lord chancellor, and all the twelve judges, considered the principle of the resolution of 1678 as extending to impeachments, before the resolution of 1678 was passed; and the knowledge of their opinion was probably one of the causes which induced the committee to make their report, two days after the question was referred to them. And when the commons were told by a peer, at a conference, that they had gained a point by the decision—

* Lord Daventry, afterwards earl of Nottingham.

that impeachments continued after a dissolution, they disclaimed it as a new acquisition; insisting that it was a right which they had always possessed, clearly and indisputably; and the lords acquiesced.

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

It was contended, that gentlemen, by conceding, as they must concede, that prorogation did not annul the impeachment, (two prorogations having taken place since the commencement of Mr. Hastings's trial) had given up the question; for there was no distinction, in the opinion of lawyers, or in the things themselves, between prorogation and dissolution. Lord Coke's statement in his fourth institute, that "Each session is in law a several parliament," could be only on the ground, that, in the consideration of the deliberative, legislative, personal, or judicial functions of parliament, dissolution and prorogation are the same. If either house, in its deliberative capacity, was engaged in any investigation, dissolution put an end to the proceedings; so did prorogation. If a legislative act was in its progress, dissolution put an end to that measure of legislation; so did prorogation. During the session of parliament, and for a certain period before the commencement, and after the conclusion, of a session, each member had personal privilege: that

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

personal privilege was put an end to by dissolution ; so it was by prorogation. All these things were equally ended by dissolution and prorogation ; and not more effectually by the former, than by the latter. But as to judicial proceedings, it was the reverse ; these continued. That writs of error and appeals remained unaffected by dissolution, as well as prorogation, was, as Mr. Pitt had observed, universally acknowledged. And the question now was, whether an impeachment, that great controlling power, which kept in awe ministers and judges, and protected the constitution, in its nature confessedly judicial, should not be included in the general rule ; whether that, without which all the rest would be useless, and of no avail, should bend to a power, which shakes none of the others ; whether, while a cause between two individuals resisted the storm of prerogative, and in the shape of a writ of error survived dissolution, a cause instituted by a whole branch of the legislature, should give way to that power ; whether the inquisitorial right of the commons should be the only exception to that important principle of the constitution, that with the single difference of the people sending new representatives, dissolution and prorogation were the same, equally annulling personal privilege,

and deliberative and legislative measures, equally leaving judicial proceedings entire and unabated.

CHAP.
XIII.
1790,

It was noticed, that the circumstance of the high court of parliament being at all times an existing court, though not always sitting to do justice, any more than the courts of law in Westminster hall, was founded in the source and origin of its jurisdiction, and was the real ground of the continuance of impeachments. The patent of peerage gave to every peer a right to act as a judge in the supreme court of the king in parliament, and this right once given could not be taken away by the king; nor did it cease by the demise of the crown. The moment the king affixed the seal to the patent of a peerage, the dignity and privilege, which belonged to it, continued to the person during his natural life, and at his death descended, according to the nature of the limitation, without diminution or change. The peer was thus constituted, or became, an hereditary judge; and the day appointed by the king for the meeting of parliament, merely fixed the time for the exercise of his jurisdiction; just as the common law, by assigning the terms to the judges in Westminster hall, fixed the time for exercising their judicial powers. The judicial

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

power of the peers was not affected by dissolution more than by prorogation, being only and equally suspended by both ; and a dissolution did not make any change in the members of the house of lords ; for it was expressly laid down by lord Coke, and admitted by every lawyer, that a peer was entitled to his writ of summons to parliament ; and if not sent to him, he might go and demand it, and take it from the office. As far, therefore, as the judges of the high court of parliament were concerned, dissolution and prorogation were precisely the same.

Most of the arguments in favor of an abatement, were taken from the practice of the courts of law, and rested upon what were called legal analogies ; but it was observed, that such reasoning could not be admitted, because the two cases were fundamentally different. The high court of parliament was established to try offences, which ordinary courts of justice could not so effectually reach ; and to attain its end, its proceedings must be governed by rules peculiar to itself, and also be wholly independent of the crown. It had been formally declared, that a lord high steward was not essential to the trial of a prisoner before the house of lords, because, if it were, the king might prevent the trial taking

place, by refusing to appoint that officer ; and, upon the same principle, the king ought not to be able to put an end to an impeachment, when begun, by dissolving parliament, because that power would render the inquisitorial rights of the house of commons perfectly nugatory ; and the most corrupt court favorite, or the most heinous state criminal, might go unpunished and uncondemned.

It was urged by the advocates for the abatement, that a dissolution must put an end to an impeachment, because the prosecuting body lost its identity, and the new house of commons, which might not contain a single member of the last, being ignorant of what had passed, was incapable of going on with the prosecution. It was replied, that a great constitutional question was not to be decided by extreme and abstract cases, but by the real and solid principles of reason and law, applied to the conduct of men, and the actual state of things. It was certainly possible, that a new parliament should not contain a single member of the old one ; but, on the other hand, it was also possible, that every member of the old parliament should be re-chosen. In point of fact, however, although numerous changes took place, yet a dissolution always left all or most of the considerable and impor-

CHAP.

XIII.

1790.

tant men in parliament—by far the greater number of those, whose situation and talents led them to take an active part in the business of the nation; and the new members might have recourse to the journals of the two houses, for information upon any point, which they might be required to determine, relative to a depending impeachment. The new house of commons being still, as Mr. Pitt well expressed it, the legal organ of the people of England, who never die, and in whose name every impeachment is brought, the sense of the people could be as well declared in the new, as in the former parliament.

It was remarked, that as far as Mr. Hastings was concerned, if it were proper for the house to proceed against him, the renewal of the impeachment would be a greater hardship, than to take it up where it stood; and that, at all events, neither the length of the proof, nor the magnitude of the crime, could, with any shadow of decency, be suffered to protect the party accused.

The house divided upon Mr. Erskine's motion, for the speaker's leaving the chair, which was negatived by a majority of 143 to 30, and the original motion passed, without a division. The members, immediately connected with Mr. Hastings, voted for the motion,

probably under the idea, that if it should be determined, that the proceedings had abated by the dissolution, the trial would not be resumed de novo, and consequently no sentence be pronounced.

In consequence of the decision upon this motion, the house of commons informed the house of lords, on the 14th of February, that they were ready to go on with the impeachment of Mr. Hastings; but the house of lords thought it right, before they sent an answer, to appoint a committee to examine precedents, for the purpose of enabling them to decide, whether the dissolution of parliament had put an end to the impeachment. The report, which occupies forty-four folio pages in the journals, was made on the 19th of April; and on the 16th of May, the day fixed for taking it into consideration, lord Porchester moved, "That a message be sent to the commons, that this house will proceed upon the trial of Warren Hastings esq. on Monday next*." Another motion, under the form of an amendment, was made by lord Radnor, who, after declaring his opinion in favor of the continuance of the impeachment, proposed to leave out all the words in the original motion, after the word "That," and to insert the following

* The words "on Monday next" were not in the motion when first made, but were added afterwards.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

in their place, "it be referred to the twelve judges, as a question, to examine the bond of recognizance entered into by the sureties of Warren Hastings, esq. and to report to the house, on Wednesday next, their opinion on the same;" the object of which amendment was, to ascertain whether the obligation of the recognizance still existed, and consequently, whether there would be any security for the future appearance of Mr. Hastings. A long debate ensued, in which the general question, whether a dissolution of parliament put an end to an impeachment, was fully discussed; and the result was, the rejection of lord Radnor's amendment, by a majority of 50, and the adoption of lord Porchester's motion, by a majority of 48: the numbers in the former case, were 70, and 20; and in the latter, 66, and 18. Thus was it decided, by large majorities in both houses, that a dissolution of parliament did not put an end to an impeachment; and, accordingly, the trial of Mr. Hastings proceeded on the day appointed.

There never perhaps was a question, upon which the great lawyers of the day, in both houses of parliament, were more divided, than upon this; and it is remarkable, that Mr. Pitt differed from all the professional men officially connected with him. Lord

Thurlow¹, lord Kenyon², sir Richard Arden³,
 sir Archibald Macdonald⁴, Sir John Scott⁵,
 Mr. Mitford⁶, Mr. Erskine⁷, and Mr. Har-
 dinge⁸, were in favor of the abatement;
 lord Mansfield⁹, lord Camden¹⁰, lord Lough-
 borough¹¹, Mr. Adam¹², Mr. Anstruther¹³,
 and Mr. Bearcroft¹⁴, were against it. Of the

CHAP.
 XIII.

1791.

¹ Lord chancellor.

² Lord chief justice of the king's bench.

³ Master of the rolls, and afterwards chief justice of the common pleas.

⁴ Attorney general, and afterwards lord chief baron of the exchequer.

⁵ Solicitor general, and afterwards successively attorney general, chief justice of the common pleas, and lord chancellor.

⁶ Afterwards solicitor and attorney general, speaker of the house of commons in England, and lord chancellor of Ireland.

⁷ Afterwards lord chancellor.

⁸ A Welch judge.

⁹ Formerly chief justice of the king's bench.

¹⁰ Lord president of the council, and formerly chief justice of the common pleas, and lord chancellor. Lord Mansfield was too old and infirm to attend the house; and lord Camden was compelled by indisposition to leave the house, before the conclusion of the debate; but they both authorized lord Loughborough to express their sentiments.

¹¹ Lord chief justice of the common pleas, and afterwards lord chancellor.

¹² Afterwards a baron of the exchequer in Scotland.

¹³ Afterwards chief justice in India.

¹⁴ Chief justice of Chester. To this list may be added, Mr. Spencer Perceval, who was not at this time a member of the house of commons, but was afterwards solicitor

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

eminent statesmen of the day, by far the greater number were against the abatement, namely, Mr. Pitt, Mr. Fox, Mr. Burke, Mr. Dundas, Mr. Windham, Mr. Addington, Mr. Grey, Mr. Sheridan, lord Grenville, lord Guildford, and lord Stormont; which list includes the most distinguished political men in both houses, and certainly comprehends persons, who were not in the habit of agreeing upon points which came under parliamentary discussion.

THE hearing of three, out of the twenty charges carried up to the house of lords, had occupied three years. This slow progress of the trial was noticed in the discussion of the question of abatement, and was very generally represented as exposing Mr. Hastings to serious hardship. Besides the time which the managers might require for going through the remaining seventeen charges, it was to be expected, that both the defence and the reply would each occupy a considerable period, after which the peers would have to examine and to deliberate upon the whole of the evidence, and the arguments adduced by both

and attorney general, and first lord of the treasury: he published a very able pamphlet against the abatement, but without his name.

parties. It appeared, therefore, that the trial, if carried on in the manner originally designed, would extend to a length, not only far beyond any example, but scarcely consistent with the ends of justice, and which might bring discredit upon a jurisdiction, acknowledged to be essential to the maintenance of the constitution. To obviate these inconveniences, Mr. Burke, on the 14th of February, proposed a motion, for limiting the prosecution to a single charge more, namely, that relating to contracts, pensions, and allowances, and for relinquishing all the rest. He stated, as some explanation of the little progress which had been made, that though three years had elapsed since the trial began, the court had sat only sixty-seven days, upon an average of about four hours a day; and that though only three charges had been finished, each of them contained a number of facts, sufficient to constitute a separate impeachment; the whole body of charges, including, perhaps, as much criminal matter, as was to be found in all the impeachments which had ever taken place. To prove that no blame, on account of the delay, was imputable to the managers, he entered into a full detail of the difficulties and obstructions, which had been thrown in their way, and

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

expressed his hope, that the motion, which he now submitted to the house, would bring the business to a speedy decision.

In the debate which followed, all who spoke, however they might differ upon other points, concurred in regretting the long continuance of the trial. Two amendments were proposed, the object of the first of which was, that the house should not proceed any farther with the charges, but request the peers to pass judgment immediately upon those which had been heard. To this amendment Mr. Pitt strongly objected, not only because the charge itself, relative to contracts, was intimately connected with the preceding ones, but because the evidence to be produced upon it, might invalidate and disprove the plea of necessity, which the advocates of Mr. Hastings had alleged, and the only plea they could allege, in justification of every breach of treaty, and of every act of extortion. Many instances of such conduct were so clearly established, that they could not be denied; but it was contended, that they were absolutely required, by the situation of the company's affairs, and did not arise from any corrupt motive, or the slightest view to private emolument—in short, that they could not have been avoided, without an utter sacrifice of the

British interests in India. The house could not, therefore, with any propriety, abandon a charge, from the investigation of which it might appear, that Mr. Hastings himself had, by a profuse and unwarrantable expenditure of the company's money, created this necessity ; or that, in consequence of large sums lying at his disposal, the pretended necessity had no existence at all : in either of which cases, the plea of state necessity, so far from being conclusive in his favor, would be perfectly nugatory ; and, upon the whole, he was of opinion, that the issue of the trial would be greatly influenced by the facts, which might, or might not, be substantiated in the investigation of the proposed charge.

The duration of the trial, he said, had been mentioned as an insuperable objection to its farther process ; but this objection was founded on a false principle, in estimating the time which the remaining charges would occupy, by the time employed upon the former ones. It by no means followed, that because three charges had taken up three years, a fourth charge would last a proportionate time ; or because a former charge had contained fifty allegations, that another must contain as many ; and more especially, as those gentlemen, who were best informed upon the subject, had as-

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

sured the house, that the proof of the charge in question would lie in a very narrow compass. There was no danger of any material delay from entering upon this charge; but there was much and well-founded apprehension, that by declining it, and separating charges dependent upon each other, all the time and pains spent upon the impeachment would be completely lost. Every one must acknowledge, that three years formed a long period for an innocent man to remain under the suspense and anxiety of accusation, for which some indemnification would be indisputably due; and even to a guilty person, such a protracted trial must, in any ordinary case, be considered as constituting no small portion of punishment. But should the charges preferred against Mr. Hastings, or the principal part of them, be proved, what man would assert, that the punishment he had already suffered, was, in any degree, adequate to the magnitude of his crimes? And under any circumstances, it was incumbent upon the house, not to allow compassion for an individual to supersede their duty, as grand inquisitors of the nation, or to interfere with their indispensable regard to public example, and to public justice. Considering the house bound, upon these grounds, to proceed with

the charge respecting contracts, he should support the original motion, and vote against the amendment.

CHAP
XIII.
1791.

The object of the second amendment was, to put an end to the trial, without calling upon the lords to pronounce any judgment. After which, it was moved to adjourn, that the amendments might be separately considered on a future day. The motion for adjournment was negatived, by a majority of 231 to 26. The second amendment was then rejected, by a majority of 194 to 54; and the first by a majority of 161 to 79. The original motion passed without any division; and it was then unanimously agreed, that the same managers should be appointed; and that a message should be sent to the house of lords, informing their lordships, that the commons were ready to proceed with the trial of Mr. Hastings.

THE hostilities which had commenced in India, were the subject of two debates in the house of commons, soon after the Christmas recess; in the former of which Mr. Francis moved thirteen resolutions, for the purpose of censuring the origin, and preventing the farther prosecution, of the war; which he represented, as entered into without sufficient

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

reason, as ruinously expensive, and not likely to be productive of any adequate advantage to the company; more especially, as it was by no means desirable, that Tippoo's power should be reduced, but that he should remain a counterpoise to the formidable and increasing influence of the Mahrattas.

Mr. Pitt and Mr. Dundas, in opposing these resolutions, contended, that the forts in question belonged to the Dutch, by right of conquest, and were equally independent of the rajah of Cochin, and of the sultan of Mysore; that the rajah of Travancore, as a sovereign prince, had a right to purchase them, without any just ground of offence to Tippoo, who could only wish to possess them as the means of annoying his neighbors; that the war really originated in the restless ambition of Tippoo, his hostility to the British interests, and his long premeditated design of subduing Travancore, which would open to him an easy entrance into the Carnatic, and enable him to attack our dominions in that part of India; that in the year 1788, before he could possibly have urged any complaint against the rajah, relative to these forts, he advanced to the boundary of Travancore, with an army of 150,000 men, but retreated without committing any act of hostility, upon being informed

of the consequences by the governor of Madras ; that he had lately made the purchase of the forts a pretence for invading the rajah's country, which he knew we were bound by treaty to defend ; that at the moment he professed a readiness to accede to our proposal of settling the points in dispute by negotiation, he had been guilty of fresh hostilities ; that, under these circumstances, a war on our part was unavoidable, without the sacrifice both of our honor and of our interest, and a forfeiture of all respect among the native powers of India ; that the idea of conniving at such unprincipled and insulting conduct in Tippoo, who was the inveterate enemy of the English, in order to balance him against the Mahrattas, who were our friends, was a species of policy not easily understood, and which could not fail to be attended with the most mischievous effects ; that no danger was to be apprehended from the power of the Mahrattas, on account of their want of union among themselves ; and that their assistance, and that of the nizam, in the present instance, would probably bring the war to a speedier conclusion, by compelling Tippoo to abandon his ambitious projects, and to yield to fair and equitable terms, which were the only objects the company and their allies had in view.

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

In the course of the debate an insinuation was thrown out, that the confederated powers had engaged in the war, under an express agreement to continue it, till Tippoo should be deprived of all his dominions, of which the English were to have a share, not only in opposition to the sentiments of all who were best acquainted with Indian affairs, but contrary to the principles laid down in the India bills, both of Mr. Pitt and Mr. Fox—that the company ought not to make any farther conquests. The existence of any such agreement was positively denied by Mr. Pitt and Mr. Dundas, who unequivocally admitted, that no war ought to be undertaken for the purpose of extending our dominions in India; but it did not follow from thence, they said, that every provocation was to be submitted to, and that no insult or encroachment was to be resisted; or that, at the end of a necessary war, the company might not indemnify themselves by such an addition to their territories, as would, by increasing their strength, secure the future continuance of peace.

There was evidently so general an impression in the house, that Tippoo, who was known to be an insidious and faithless tyrant, had been the unprovoked aggressor in these hostilities, and that lord Cornwallis, the governor

general of Bengal, had acted with his usual prudence and moderation, that Mr. Francis did not venture to take the sense of the house upon any of his resolutions, and they were all rejected without a division.

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

But though this attempt to bring discredit upon the British government in India, had completely failed, it was thought necessary by ministers, for the full vindication of the governor general, and to prevent the possibility of any doubt being entertained in India, of the sentiments of parliament, that the house of commons should express a positive approbation of his conduct, and of the origin of the war. Mr. Dundas, therefore, a few days afterwards, proposed three resolutions, in the first of which Tippoo's attack upon the lines of Travancore, was declared to be an unprovoked and unwarrantable infraction of the treaty of Mangalore; in the second, the determination of the governor general, to consider that attack as a just ground of hostility on the part of the English, was pronounced to be highly meritorious; and in the third, the treaties entered into with the nizam and the Mahrattas were commended, as calculated to give vigor to the operations of the war, and to promote the future tranquillity of India. These three resolutions, after some

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

debate, passed without a division ; and it is not a little remarkable, that Mr. Fox, who condemned the war, and was of course adverse to the resolutions, suggested an amendment of one of them, which Mr. Pitt readily adopted, as making it more applicable to his purpose.

Much having been said in these debates, as well as upon other occasions, relative to the system which ought to be pursued in India, I shall transcribe an extract of a private letter from the board of control, to the governor general, signed by Mr. Pitt and Mr. Dundas, and dated July 19th, 1786, as it will shew the principles upon which they wished the British government in India to act :—" One universal principle, never to be departed from, either in the present condition of the native powers, or in any future revolutions among them, is, that we are completely satisfied with the possessions we already have, and will engage in no war for the purpose of farther acquisitions. The next leading principle, which must occupy your attention, is, to keep a constant watch upon the conduct of all European rivals, particularly the French. And as they cannot possibly interfere in the disputes of any of the native powers, without ultimately intending prejudice to us, it seems to follow as a just conclusion, and not to be much con-

cealed in our communication with Indian princes, that if any of them shall accept of European aid, we shall feel ourselves warranted to throw the aid of our force into the opposite scale.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

“ It ought to be inculcated, in every transaction with them, that the acceptance of any such aid, can only be with the risque of having our whole force immediately employed to crush the effects of it ; and it should be generally known and understood, that peace is our primary object, and that we wish to pursue the interchanges of trade beneficial to them and to us, with any country in India ; and to render those parts of India, which are within our immediate administration, completely happy under the protection of British power ; that we shall refrain from all interference in the contentions which may arise among the native powers, unless called for by the stipulation of an existing treaty ; but that we shall not take advantage of their jealousies of one another, in order to aggrandize the British power by the depression of any one of them.

“ On the other hand, while we are contented to pursue the pacific and neutral system in our own particular, we shall be strictly jealous of every interference from any other

CHAP. European nation whatever, which may either
 XIII. disturb the peace of India, or introduce their
 1791. own arms or influence to sow distraction
 among the princes or inhabitants."

It has been noticed, that on the day the navy estimates were voted, Mr. Pitt, in reply to a question from Mr. Fox, said, that certain circumstances in the situation of Europe rendered it necessary to keep in commission, for the present, an additional number of ships beyond the regular peace establishment; in which intimation he alluded to the negotiation then carrying on at Petersburg, relative to peace between Russia and the Porte. Soon afterwards he received dispatches, informing him, that Catharine treated Mr. Fawkeners with the utmost contempt; declaring, that she only received his suggestions, as coming from the minister of a court with which she was at peace, without acknowledging Great Britain in the character of a mediator; and that she persisted in her demand to keep possession of Oczakow, and the country between the Bog and the Niester. Mr. Pitt considered this as a point by no means to be yielded, without still farther exertions; and, therefore, had recourse to a measure, which he hoped would bring the business to a more

favorable result. On the 28th of March, he delivered a message from the king, in which his majesty acquainted the house of commons, that his endeavors, in conjunction with his allies, to accomplish a pacification between Russia and the Porte, had hitherto proved ineffectual; and the consequences, which might arise from the continuance of the war, being highly important to the interests of himself and his allies, and to those of Europe in general, his majesty judged it requisite, in order to add weight to his representations, to augment his naval force, relying on the zeal and affection of the house of commons to make good such expences as might be incurred by these preparations, for the purpose of supporting the interests of his kingdom, and of contributing to the restoration of general tranquillity, on a secure and lasting foundation.

On the following day, when the message was taken into consideration, Mr. Pitt moved an address to the king, thanking his majesty for his communication, and promising to support the measures he had thought proper to adopt. In proposing this address, he said, that while the system of defensive alliance was generally commended, the house would, he trusted, admit that a temporary expence

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

might be wisely and judiciously incurred, to prevent any alteration in the relative condition of the powers of Europe, which might tend to weaken the security expected from that system. Upon this principle, an additional force had been kept up, with the approbation of that house, after the late armament, because the situation of affairs seemed to demand it; and events had since happened, which rendered a farther augmentation necessary. The influence of the Turkish empire was acknowledged to be considerable, in the general scale of European powers; and its present state was such, as to afford just grounds of apprehension to all those countries, whose interests were in any degree liable to be affected by the diminution of that influence. Without mentioning Oczakow, he observed, in general terms, that, if Russia, by the result of the war, should gain any material accession of strength at the expence of Turkey, the effect would not be confined to those two empires, but would be felt by the rest of Europe; and particularly by Prussia, the country with which we were most intimately connected. The interference, therefore, of England, under existing circumstances, was indispensable for the preservation of that balance of power, which, in the judgment of

all statesmen, and of men of all political principles, was essential to the independence and safety of Europe.

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

To this address it was objected, it being well known to what the king's message referred, that a dispute about the frontiers of Turkey—whether a fortress, and a barren, uncultivated district at the extremity of Europe, should belong to this or that power, was not a sufficient reason for plunging this kingdom into a war, from which it could derive no adequate advantage; that in fact, no possession of Great Britain, or of her allies, was attacked, or even threatened, no treaty or right violated, her commerce not interrupted, or her honor insulted; that we had no right to dictate to Russia the terms on which she should make peace, or to require her to cede all her conquests; that she had given proof of her moderation, by demanding only Oczakow, and its dependencies, which were too inconsiderable in themselves to affect the balance of power in Europe; that no alliance subsisted between Great Britain and Turkey, a country which, for a century, had been connected with our rivals, the French; and that, by the proposed armament, and the war which might follow, we should provoke and alienate Russia, with whom we had great and important commer-

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

cial concerns. Upon these grounds, it was moved, to omit that part of the address, which pledged the house to support the armament, and to substitute other words, declaring, that the house could not, without abandoning their duty, load their constituents with additional burdens, for the maintenance of interests, which were neither explained nor understood. This amendment was rejected, by a majority of 228 to 135; and the address passed in its original form.

It was, however, obvious, that the measure was not approved by many members, who generally supported government, which induced Mr. Grey to call upon the house again to express their sentiments upon it, by moving a series of resolutions, the object of which was, to pronounce the armament inexpedient, and unnecessary. Every exertion was made by the opposite parties, to collect their respective friends upon this occasion; and, after a long and warm debate, the resolutions were negatived, by a majority of only 80; the numbers being, 252, and 172.

The diminution of the majority, when the house was much fuller than on the former day, encouraged those, who were adverse to the armament, to bring the subject a third time before the house; and three days afterwards,

Mr. Baker moved two resolutions, differing in words from Mr. Grey's, but to the same effect, which were rejected, by a majority of 254 to 162.—This small increase in the majority, did not prevent the opposition from bringing forward a fourth discussion of this question. On the 25th of May, when the session was evidently drawing to a conclusion, Mr. T. Grenville moved an address to the king, representing the advantages arising to this country, from a friendly and commercial intercourse with Russia; and humbly and earnestly requesting, that his majesty would be graciously pleased to decline all hostile interference upon the subject of the fortress and district of Oczakow. This address was rejected, by 208, to 114; being an addition of two to the last majority.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Pitt resisted these motions for condemning the armament, upon general principles; but it was impossible for him, consistently with his duty, to state the precise points upon which the negotiation turned; nor could he, with propriety, enter into a detailed explanation of the danger which would arise from the subversion or reduction of the Ottoman empire, and the consequent accession of territory to the empress of Russia, whose immense power was already formidable

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

to her neighbors, and who was known to have conceived projects of the most mischievous tendency to the rest of Europe. These, however, were considerations, which had great weight in influencing his line of foreign politics at the present moment, and in rendering him extremely anxious to prevent the farther aggrandisement of Russia.

THE next subject to be mentioned relates to the new modelling of the legislature of one of our own colonies. When the province of Quebec was ceded by France to Great Britain, by the treaty of peace in 1763, a proclamation was issued, in which his majesty promised, that measures should be taken for extending to the inhabitants, the benefits of the British constitution. Nothing, however, was done till the year 1774, when an act passed, “for making more effectual provision for the government of the province of Quebec.” This act was far from giving satisfaction, or answering its purpose; and it was now found to be, in many respects, inapplicable to the present state of the province. Mr. Pitt had for some time been endeavoring to frame a plan, better suited to existing circumstances, and as nearly analogous to the British constitution, as the case would admit; and, on the 4th of March,

he submitted to the house, the heads of the bill he intended to introduce, for dividing the country into two provinces, to be called, Upper and Lower Canada, in which there should be separate legislatures, each consisting, in imitation of the constitution of the mother country, of a legislative council, and of a house of assembly, which should have power, with the consent of the king signified by the governor, to enact laws for their respective provinces; all the present laws and ordinances remaining in force, till repealed or altered by the new legislatures. The members of the councils were to be nominated by the king, and to continue for life, his majesty being also authorized to annex to certain honors, corresponding to those of our peerage, an hereditary right to sit in the councils: the number of the members of the council in Upper Canada, was not to be less than 7, and in Lower Canada, not less than 15: the members of the house of assembly were to be elected by districts and townships, and to continue for seven years; the qualification for voters in the former, being a freehold of 40 shillings a year, and in the latter, owning a house of 5*l.* or occupying one of 10*l.* a year; the number of members of the house of assembly in Upper Canada was not to be

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

less than 16, and in Lower Canada not less than 30; the governors of the respective provinces were to appoint the time of the meeting of the legislative council and house of assembly, to prorogue, and to dissolve them; there was to be a right of appeal from the provincial courts of law to the governor and executive council, and from them to the privy council in England, and ultimately to the house of lords; provision was to be made for the maintenance of the protestant clergy of the established church, by an allotment of one-seventh of the land; and to prevent any such discontents, as had occasioned the separation of the American states, the British parliament was to have no power to impose any taxes upon the inhabitants, except for the regulation of trade and commerce, and the levy and disposal of those taxes were to be under the direction of the local legislatures.

The grand object in dividing the country into two distinct provinces, was, to put an end to the competition and disputes between the old French inhabitants, who almost entirely resided in Lower Canada, and the new settlers from England and the American states, who were principally fixed in Upper Canada, and were daily increasing. It was also hoped, that the establishment of two in-

dependent legislatures would tend to make the laws definite and well understood, the uncertain and defective nature of which had hitherto operated very disadvantageously, especially in commercial concerns; and that it would have the effect of producing, from time to time, laws adapted to the wishes and condition of each province.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

The bill containing these regulations, was read a first and second time, and passed through the committee, without any opposition or debate; but on the day the report was to be taken into consideration, a petition was presented against it from certain merchants, warehousemen, and manufacturers of Quebec, who conceived it would operate in a manner prejudicial to their interests; and Mr. Hussey proposed it should be re-committed. Mr. Fox immediately rose, and objected, in strong terms, to several parts of the bill: he did not approve the division of the country into two provinces; and he thought, that the proposed constitution was not agreeable to the principles of liberty, which were gaining ground, and would increase in consequence of the general diffusion of literature and knowledge in the world; the numbers of which the houses of assembly were to consist, were, he said, too small, as not making the government suffi-

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

ciently popular, and their duration was too long; why a septennial bill should be preferred to a triennial or an annual one, he confessed was beyond his comprehension; he saw nothing so good in hereditary honors as to make him wish to introduce them into any country, where they did not at present exist; and he thought that, in this instance, they tended to render the constitution worse, rather than better, by giving an undue influence to the king and the governor; he therefore wished the council to be elective, and that its members should be chosen from amongst the richest persons of the province, by those, whose property was also considerable; the provision for the protestant clergy, appeared to him too large; and the appeal to the privy council unnecessary: for these reasons, he wished the bill to be again referred to a committee, that its clauses might be more fully considered.

Mr. Pitt lamented, that these objections had not occurred to Mr. Fox in an earlier stage of the bill; but he readily acceded to its recommitment, from a desire of availing himself of any opportunity of hearing observations, and receiving information, in the difficult and important business of settling a new system for the government of a distant colony. He

thought, however, that at present the proposed assemblies would be sufficiently numerous, and they might be increased, when the population of the provinces * became greater, as the bill only fixed the minimum. He totally differed from Mr. Fox, respecting the expediency of making the councils elective, and excluding all hereditary honors; he thought, that none of those republican principles, which Mr. Fox had applauded, and described as resulting from a greater extension of learning in these more enlightened times, would improve the constitution of Britain, or of its colonies; and that in the Canadas, there ought to be hereditary aristocratical councils, answering to the British house of lords; he contended, that the only method of reconciling the jarring interests, and opposite views of the inhabitants, was, by giving them two legislatures, in one of which the antient Canadians might have the ascendancy, and in the other the new settlers; as animosity and confusion must arise, from uniting in the same legislature, persons so dissimilar in religion, language, manners, and character; the conquerors, and the conquered;

* The population of Upper Canada was supposed at this time, to be 10,000, including men, women, and children; and of Lower Canada 100,000.

CHAP. some attached to the English, others to the
 XIII. French laws. He trusted, however, that the
 1791. French would hereafter voluntarily adopt the
 English jurisprudence, from a conviction of
 its being preferable to their own, which would
 be far better than using any compulsion upon
 the subject. With respect to the protestant
 clergy, he was desirous of making an ade-
 quate provision for them, sufficient to enable
 them to support their situation with respec-
 tability ; and a seventh of the land was not
 equal in value to a tenth of its produce, which
 was the provision for the parochial clergy in
 England.

On a subsequent day, Mr. Fox repeated
 his assertion, that he preferred an elective to
 an hereditary council in Canada, but denied
 that this would make the government more
 republican ; and, apparently from a conscious-
 ness that his speech, in the former debate, had
 left an unfavorable impression upon the house,
 which he was anxious to remove, he said, he
 did not wish our hereditary house of lords to
 be abolished, and an elective one substituted
 in its room ; he admitted, that every part of
 the British dominions ought to possess a
 government, in the constitution of which,
 monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, were
 mutually blended and united ; nor would any

government be a fit one for British subjects to live under, which did not contain its due weight of aristocracy, because he considered that to be the proper poise of the constitution, the balance which equalized and meliorated the powers of the two other extreme branches, and gave stability and firmness to the whole.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Pitt expressed great satisfaction at hearing these sentiments from Mr. Fox, which he probably thought not perfectly consistent with his former declarations. He then proceeded to observe, that true aristocracy gave that sort of energy, that sort of spirit, that sort of enterprize, which always made a country great and happy; it reflected lustre on the crown, and lent support and effect to the democracy, while the democracy gave vigor and energy to both; and the sovereignty crowned the constitution with authority and dignity. He was as anxious as Mr. Fox professed himself to be, that as much as possible of a constitution, deservedly the glory and happiness of those who lived under it, and the envy of the world, should be extended to all our dependencies. But, though he agreed with Mr. Fox, in these general principles, he differed from him with respect to the aristocracy proper to be infused into the constitution of Canada, which he thought

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

might be brought nearer to our own, by other means than those proposed by Mr. Fox. The British aristocracy, Mr. Pitt said, was respectable, not merely on account of its property, though that undoubtedly was no small consideration, but also for its hereditary distinctions, flowing from the crown as the fountain of honor. It was, on that account, not less the poise of the constitution, as Mr. Fox had emphatically expressed it, than if the aristocracy had been elective; on the contrary, it was more so, because, according to the known genius and spirit of our constitution, monarchy was the source, from whence the other parts arose; and, therefore, the more near the aristocracy was to the crown, the more immediately congenial would it be to the constitution itself, as originally planned and adopted by our ancestors. In that happy form, and constructed upon that wise principle, we felt the blessings of monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, all united. He should lament, therefore, to create an aristocracy by a selection from property alone, or by making it elective, as in either case it would bring the poise nearer to the people, than it was to the crown, in the British constitution. He agreed with Mr. Fox, that we could not give all the respect to a new nobility, which belonged to

an hereditary line of nobles, traceable to remote antiquity; but we could give the same degree of respect to it, which had accompanied the origin of our nobility; and succeeding ages must bestow the rest. Hereditary nobility could, from its nature, be only gradual; and there was something, he thought, in the habits, customs, and manners of Canada, which peculiarly fitted it for the reception of hereditary honors. He was firmly persuaded, that an aristocracy, derived from the imperial crown of Great Britain, would materially strengthen the connexion between the colony and the mother country. The want of those honors had, he doubted not, tended to accelerate the separation of the former American colonies. He neither wished the aristocracy to be dependent on the crown, nor on the people; and, though the present infant state of the colony would not supply a due proportion of peers, yet, as extension of commerce and increase of wealth would probably follow the introduction of the new constitution, it might be expected, that, in process of time*, there would be an hereditary aristocracy, clothed with the respect and influence, which ought always to belong to that

* Though 30 years have elapsed since this bill passed, no hereditary honor has been conferred in Canada.

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

branch of a free government. It was indeed impossible, at present, to give the precise British constitution to Canada; but a foundation might be now laid, and the complete superstructure might be erected at a future period.

While the bill was passing through the committee the second time, Mr. Pitt mentioned, that it was in contemplation to send a protestant bishop to Canada, who should be a member of the legislative council, and by his rank and weight strengthen the established church*. To this idea Mr. Fox was decidedly adverse, asserting, that popery or presbyterianism ought to be the established religion in Canada, and that the appointment of a protestant bishop would be perfectly unjustifiable.

Two motions of Mr. Fox, the one for omitting the clause relative to hereditary nobility, and the other for fixing the number of the house of assembly, in Lower Canada, at 100, were rejected by majorities of more than two to one†; and the bill passed as originally

* In 1793 Dr. Jacob Mountain was consecrated bishop of Quebec, and went immediately to Canada, where he has ever since presided over the church, with great honor to himself and advantage to the concerns of his extensive diocese, which includes both provinces.

† In the former case the numbers were 88 and 39, and in the latter 91 and 40.

proposed by Mr. Pitt, except that, to meet in some degree the ideas of Mr. Fox, he consented that the houses of assembly should be chosen every four years instead of seven ; that the house of assembly in Lower Canada should consist of 50 members, instead of 30 ; and that there should be an immediate appeal to the house of lords, without the intervention of the privy council.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

THESE debates relative to a new constitution for Canada, led Mr. Fox and Mr. Burke to deliver their opposite sentiments upon the French revolution, more fully and decidedly than they had done in the preceding session of parliament. Mr. Fox, indeed, in the present session, seemed to seek every occasion of alluding to this subject. On the day he first stated his objections to the Quebec bill, he said, that he could not account for the desire to make hereditary distinctions a part of the new constitution, unless it were, that, Quebec having been formerly a French colony, there might be an opportunity of reviving those titles of honor, the extinction of which in France, some gentlemen so much deplored. This observation evidently referred to Mr. Burke, who happened not to be present ; but he went to the house on the day

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

fixed for the re-commitment of the bill, prepared to make some strictures upon what Mr. Fox had said. The consideration of the bill, however, was deferred, on account of the thin attendance of members; and therefore Mr. Burke could only express his regret at the difference of opinion between himself and a right honorable gentleman, whose eloquence was so greatly superior to his own, and whose abilities nothing could resist. Dear, however, as was his friend, desirous as he was to avoid any disagreement, there was another object still dearer, of which he was still more desirous, the discharge of his duty. His sentiments and principles were not unknown; and whenever the occasion should again present itself, he would not shun to declare them.

This notice, having excited great expectation, caused the house to be extremely full on the day to which the commitment of the bill was postponed; and as soon as the chairman had put the usual question, for reading the bill paragraph by paragraph, Mr. Burke rose, and observed, that the point first to be considered was, whether the house was competent to appoint a legislature for a distant people. A body of rights, commonly called The Rights of Man, had, he said, been lately imported

from a neighboring country, and was held up by certain persons in this kingdom, as paramount to all other rights. A principal article in this new code was, that “All men are born free, equal in respect of rights, and continue so in society.” If such a doctrine were to be admitted, the power of the house could extend no farther, than to call together the inhabitants of Canada, and recommend to them a free choice of government for themselves. But he rather chose to argue from another code, on which mankind, in all ages, had hitherto acted—the law of nations. On this, alone, he conceived the competence of the house to rest. From this we learnt, that we possessed the right of legislating for Canada, founded upon a claim of sovereignty over that country, which was at first obtained by conquest, but afterwards confirmed and acknowledged by the cession of its former government, and established by long uninterrupted possession.

The competence of the house being, therefore, unquestionable, the next point to be considered was, after what model the proposed constitution was to be formed. He believed, that the constitution of the American states, to which Canada was contiguous, was well adapted to their peculiar circumstances, but

CHAP. XIII. 1791. being founded upon republican principles, it was not such as ought to be established in a British colony. He then asked, whether, as the majority of the population of Canada were Frenchmen, it would be right to give them the new constitution of France; a constitution founded on principles diametrically opposite to our own, as different from it as folly from wisdom, as vice from virtue—a constitution founded on the Rights of Man. The authors of it had told us, and their partizans in England had repeated, that it was a great monument, erected for the instruction of mankind. This was certainly not said, without a view to imitation. But, before we proceeded to give to Canada the new constitution of France, it would be wise to consider what would probably be the practical consequences of such a step, by inquiring into the effects which it had actually produced, where it had been adopted. —The French West India islands were in the most flourishing state, until the fatal moment when the Rights of Man were imported. Scarcely, said Mr. Burke, was this precious doctrine received among them, when Pandora's box, replete with all mortal evils, seemed to fly open, hell itself to yawn, and every demon of mischief to overspread the face of the earth. Blacks rose against whites—whites

against blacks ; and each against the other, in murderous hostility ; subordination was destroyed ; the cords of society torn asunder ; and every man appeared to thirst for the blood of his neighbor. The mother country, not receiving any great degree of pleasure in contemplating this image of herself reflected in her child, sent out a body of troops, well instructed, likewise, in the new principles, to restore order and tranquillity. These troops, immediately upon their arrival, felt themselves bound to become parties in the general rebellion, and, like most of their brethren at home, began the assertion of their free-born rights, by murdering their general. Should such an example induce us to ship off for Canada, a cargo of the Rights of Man ?

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Burke was next proceeding to give an eloquent description of the disorder and misery occasioned by the revolution in France herself, when he was called to order ; and a most extraordinary scene of altercation and confusion, which lasted several hours, ensued. He endeavored, no less than seven times, to explain, why he thought himself in order ; but it was evidently the object of those members of opposition, who were favorable to revolutionary principles, by repeated interruptions,

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

totally to silence him. It was urged, that dissertations on the French revolution were not regular or orderly, when the question before the committee was, whether the clauses of the Quebec bill should be read paragraph by paragraph; and a motion to that effect was made by lord Sheffield, and seconded by Mr. Fox, although the latter had previously declared, that he did not consider Mr. Burke out of order. Mr. Pitt was appealed to; and he said, that though he did not wish the French revolution to be discussed, yet as the design of the bill was, to provide a new government for a people at once American, French, and English, it did not appear to him improper, or contrary to the rules of the house, to inquire into the constitution of those countries, with which the Canadians were more immediately connected.

This opinion encouraged Mr. Burke and Mr. Fox to proceed, and each of them spoke twice, at considerable length. Their speeches contained mutual recriminations, and acrimonious complaints of unkind and injurious treatment, mixed however with expressions of regard and esteem; and in particular, Mr. Fox repeated, what he had said in the preceding year, that he had learned more from Mr. Burke, than from all books, and all

other men : all his political knowledge was drawn from Mr. Burke's writings, speeches, and familiar conversation; and separation from a person to whom he owed so many obligations, and from whom he had formerly received so much kindness, would be painful to him in the extreme, to the end of life.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

On a former occasion, Mr. Fox had called the new constitution of France, "the most stupendous and glorious monument which human integrity had erected to human happiness, at any time or in any country, from which neither insult nor injury could be dreaded by her neighbors;" and now he pronounced the French revolution, "one of the most glorious events in the history of mankind. The old despotism was annihilated; the new system had the good of the people for its object; and that was the point on which he rested." He considered the French revolution such an acquisition to the cause of freedom, from the dominion of France over the manners of other nations, as to justify his former panegyric; and he apologized for the excesses of the French people, in its progress, by remarking, that it was natural for them to be guilty of many extravagant and absurd actions, from the apprehension of a sudden return of that despotism which they had destroyed. The

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

calamities, however, which France had endured were trivial in comparison of the benefits, to which they had led; and he was convinced, that the French revolution would do good to England, by holding out an useful lesson both to the monarch and to the people. His admiration of that great event had been misrepresented: it had been asserted, that every man must wish to imitate what he admired; but this he denied to be conclusive reasoning. There was, indeed, one article, in which he was desirous of imitating the French: it related to a subject, on which he had been uniform throughout his political life—that of universal toleration. He said, that when Mr. Burke's book * was published, he had condemned the work, and every doctrine which it contained, both publicly and privately; he acknowledged, that he had not read the works of Mr. Mackintosh and Mr. Paine upon the same subject; but he considered such discussions as useful to political and moral truth; neither would he arraign any man for proposing to incorporate into the constitution of this country, what he approved in the system of another nation. He was ready to maintain, that the rights of man, how much soever ridiculed as chimerical and

* Reflections upon the French Revolution.

visionary, those original rights, which no prescription could supersede, no accident could remove, were in fact the basis of every rational constitution, and even of the constitution of Great Britain. By recurring to the speeches and declarations of Mr. Burke, during the American war, and in the struggle in 1784, he endeavored to fix upon him the stigma of inconsistency and gross departure from the principles upon which he had hitherto acted ; and accused him of having spoken of the French revolution without sufficient information, and of having misrepresented facts.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Burke lamented, that Mr. Fox, after an intimacy of more than two-and-twenty years, should, without the least provocation, have made a personal attack upon him, and arraigned his conduct with so much asperity. He denied the charge of inconsistency ; asserting, that no alteration had taken place in his opinions upon government ; and that there was not one action of his life, or one syllable in his book, contrary to the principles of those men, with whom our glorious constitution in 1688 originated, and to whose principles, as a whig, he declared an inviolable attachment. He contended, that the issue of all which had been done, and of all which was then doing

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

in France, could never serve the cause of liberty, but would inevitably tend to promote tyranny, oppression, injustice, and anarchy. He did not consider France as a republic; no, it was an anomaly in government; he knew not by what name to call it, or in what language to describe it. It was a compound (and he recited the verses of Milton) of the sublimely obscure and tremendous figure of death, having the likeness of a king's crown upon the seeming head, with the cry of hell-hounds that bark unceasingly round the waist of sin. It was a shapeless monster, born of hell and chaos. As to the church, it had been said, that the French had abolished all tests, and given a complete unequivocal toleration. So far from it, Mr. Burke affirmed, that they had established the most diabolical intolerance, which ever existed upon the face of the earth, and created a new test, not for the sake of security, but as the means of cruelty, oppression, and injustice, in order to afford an opportunity of depriving many thousand individuals of their bread. The clergy were forced to take this test, or starve; and yet France was the country, where there was said to be no test at all. Mr. Fox's eulogium upon the French revolution, might have an effect upon those who heard it, which he did

not intend, and still more upon others, through misapprehension or misrepresentation : its excesses were mentioned with tardy and qualified censure, while its praises were trumpeted with the loudest blasts throughout the nation. At a time when open and avowed attempts were made to circulate pamphlets and disseminate opinions subversive of the prerogative, and consequently dangerous to the constitution, it was unwarrantable for any member of that house to be day after day holding out a parade of democracy, in order to set the unthinking many raging against the crown. He conceived, that there then existed a run against monarchy ; but he trusted, that timely care would be taken to avert the impending evil. He confessed, that he wished to introduce the subject of the French revolution, for several reasons ; but principally on account of the danger which threatened our own government, from practices notorious to all the world. Were there not clubs in every quarter, who met and voted resolutions of the most alarming tendency ? Did they not correspond, not only with each other in every part of this kingdom, but with foreign countries ? Did not members of these clubs preach, in their pulpits, doctrines which were dangerous ; and celebrate, at their anniversary meetings, pro-

CHAP.ceedings incompatible with the spirit of the
 XIII. British constitution? At present, he apprehended no immediate danger. The king was in full power, possessed of all his functions; his ministers were responsible for their conduct; the country was blessed with an opposition of strong force; and the common people themselves seemed to be united with the gentry in warm feelings of loyalty. Nevertheless, he maintained, that there was still sufficient cause for jealousy and circumspection. In France there were 300,000 men in arms; who, at a favorable moment, might be happy to yield assistance to their neighbors; besides, a time of scarcity and tumult might come, when the greatest mischief was to be dreaded from a class of people, whom we might now term low intriguers and contemptible clubbists, but whom we should, at such a moment, find truly formidable. He remarked, that he had formerly differed from Mr. Fox, in several instances, but without any interruption to their friendship. It was certainly indiscreet, at his time of life, to provoke enemies, or give his friends occasion to desert him; yet, if his firm and steady adherence to the British constitution placed him in such a dilemma, he would risque all; and, as public duty and public prudence taught

him, with his last breath exclaim, "Fly from the French constitution!" He knew the price of his conduct: he had, notwithstanding, done his duty, and lost his friend. Afterwards, addressing himself to Mr. Pitt and Mr. Fox, whom he called the two great rivals in that house, he expressed a hope, that whether they hereafter moved in opposite parts of the political hemisphere, as two flaming meteors, or walked together like brethren hand in hand, they would preserve and cherish the British constitution; that they would guard it against innovation; and protect it against the pestilential breath of French philosophy.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Pitt observed, that, in his situation, and under present circumstances, it would be highly improper for him, to give any opinion upon the French revolution: but he felt it incumbent upon him to declare, that he thought Mr. Burke entitled to the gratitude of his country, for having on that day, in so able and eloquent a manner, expressed his sense of the degree of danger which already existed; and assured him, that if hereafter there should appear more serious ground for apprehension, he would most cordially co-operate with him, in taking every possible method to preserve what he (Mr. Pitt) esteemed the most per-

CHAP. fect constitution in the world, and to de-
 XIII. liver it down to posterity as the best security
 1791. for the prosperity, freedom, and happiness
 of the British people. Lord Sheffield's mo-
 tion, upon the suggestion of Mr. Pitt, was
 withdrawn, and the house adjourned, at a
 late hour, without making any progress in
 the bill.

It is remarkable, that, during this long al-
 tercation, not one of Mr. Burke's old friends
 stood forward in support of him or of his sen-
 timents; while several persons of great con-
 sideration defended Mr. Fox, and avowed the
 coincidence of their opinion with his, upon
 the subject of the French revolution. Mr.
 Fox professed an earnest desire, that the pre-
 sent disagreement might not cause a breach
 between Mr. Burke and himself; but Mr.
 Burke was so strongly impressed with the
 dangerous tendency of the doctrines applaud-
 ed and maintained by Mr. Fox, and so con-
 vinced of the impossibility of his ever acting
 with him again, that he openly declared, there
 must be an end of their political connexion.
 Foreseeing, that what was passing in France
 must ultimately, and probably at no distant
 period, affect these kingdoms, he obeyed the
 imperious call of public duty, which he held
 more sacred than all the dearest and strongest

bonds of personal regard and party attachment; and thus gave the most unequivocal proof of the sincerity of those opinions, which, both in his parliamentary speeches, and in his publications, he had supported with so much force of argument and beauty of language. It was not a disagreement of a private nature, or upon a trivial point, arising from accidental misunderstanding, and which might be accommodated by mutual explanation, or the good offices of common friends—there now appeared to exist, between these two distinguished men, an irreconcilable difference upon the fundamental principles of government, and the primary obligations of social life, called into notice and action by a most extraordinary event in a neighboring country, which had already excited a lively interest in this kingdom; and, in the acute and penetrating judgment of Mr. Burke, threatened the most alarming consequences throughout every part of the civilized world.

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

THE examination of witnesses, respecting the slave trade, being at length concluded, and every necessary information upon the subject obtained, Mr. Wilberforce, on the 18th of April, moved for "Leave to bring in a bill to prevent the farther importation of

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

slaves into the British colonies in the West Indies." The debate lasted two days, on the latter of which Mr. Pitt delivered his sentiments strongly in favor of the motion. He began by observing, that from the first hour of his having a seat in that house to the present, among all the questions, whether political or personal, in the discussion of which it had been his fortune to take a share, there never had been one, in which his heart was so deeply interested, as in that under consideration. It was not, however, a mere question of feeling; it was not solely for the sake of exercising humanity, that the abolition of the trade in slaves was pressed upon parliament. The main argument, which ought to determine the minds of gentlemen, was, that the slave trade was founded in injustice; "and it is, therefore, said Mr. Pitt, such a trade, as it is impossible for me to support, unless it shall be first proved, that there are no laws of morality binding upon nations, and that it is no duty of a legislature to restrain its subjects from invading the happiness of other countries, and from violating the fundamental principles of justice."

The chief objection urged against the motion had been, the alledged impossibility of maintaining the population in the West Indies,

without a fresh importation of slaves ; and to that objection Mr. Pitt directed the greater part of his speech. But previously he expressed his hope, that gentlemen would not consider any disadvantage to the plantations, which was merely small and temporary, to be a sufficient reason to warrant the continuance of the trade. It was surely not any slight degree of expediency, any small balance of profit, or any light shades of probability, on the one side rather than on the other, which would influence the vote of any gentleman upon so important a point. He apologized even for the supposition. The house, he was confident, would not decide the question upon such grounds. The slave trade was an evil of such magnitude, that there must be a common wish in the house, at once to put an end to it, if there were no very great and serious obstacle. Nothing short of the utmost danger, nay of inevitable ruin, to the West Indies, ought to be urged as a reason for continuing a trade of this description. It was a trade, by which multitudes of unoffending nations were deprived of the blessings of civilization, and had their peace and happiness invaded ; by which a whole continent was kept in a state of darkness, ignorance, bondage, and blood. It ought

CHAP.

XIII.

1791.

CHAP. therefore to be no common expediency; it

XIII.

1791.

ought to be either some positive necessity, or at least something very like necessity, which it became those to plead, who took upon themselves to defend the continuance of this trade. He knew that the West Indian gentlemen had used very strong language upon this part of the subject, and had expressed an alarm for the islands, which was of a very serious nature indeed. It would be proper, however, for the house to judge for themselves; for he could not help thinking, that there was an over great degree of sensibility among those gentlemen on this particular point; and that their alarm, as he hoped to prove, was excited in a manner which the occasion by no means justified. He had himself endeavored carefully and impartially to examine into the ground of this apprehension, and he would now proceed to lay those reasons before the house, which induced him firmly to believe, not only that no permanent mischief would ensue from the abolition, but not even any such temporary injury or inconvenience, as could be considered an adequate reason for preventing the house from agreeing to the motion before them; and that, on the contrary, the abolition itself would lay the foundation for the more solid improve-

ment of all the various interests of those colonies.

Mr. Pitt then stated, in detail, from the evidence presented to the house by their committee, the annual loss of slaves in the several islands, that is, the excess of deaths above the births; and shewed it to be so small, that no doubt could remain of the number being fully kept up without any fresh importation, by means of new regulations, and a general improved mode of treating the slaves, which would of course follow the abolition of the trade, and must have the effect of diminishing the number of deaths, as well as of rendering the slaves more prolific. Was there then, continued Mr. Pitt, any ground for alarm from the measure of abolishing the slave trade—of abolishing it entirely and immediately? And was there in reality any of that impracticability to be pleaded, on which alone so many gentlemen had rested all their objections? Must we not blush at pretending, that it would distress our consciences to abolish this most horrid trade, on account of the dangerous consequences to the West Indian Islands?

Intolerable were the mischiefs of that trade, both in its origin, and through every stage of its progress. Africa had been described as a country half cultivated; and in

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

such a country, in order to promote that trade, application must be made to the avarice and the worst passions of the princes. To say that slaves can be furnished by fair and commercial means, would be absurd and ridiculous. The trade sometimes ceased, as during the last war; sometimes the demand increased, sometimes it was declining, according to circumstances. But how was it possible, that to a demand so extremely fluctuating, the supply of slaves should always exactly accommodate itself? "Alas! Alas!" said Mr. Pitt, "we make human beings the subject of commerce; we learn to talk of them as such, yet we will not allow to them the common principle of commerce, that the supply must accommodate itself to the consumption. It is not from wars, then, that the slaves are chiefly furnished. They are obtained by other methods, in proportion as they are wanted. If a demand for slaves arises, a supply is forced in one way or other; and it is in vain, overpowered as we now are, with positive evidence, to deny, that by the slave trade we are the causes of the dreadful enormities committed on that unhappy continent. It is plain, if we consider the number annually carried off, that no regular or ordinary means can furnish so many captives."

After describing the cruelty and misery of the middle passage, and pointing out the advantages which the West Indies themselves would derive from the abolition of the slave trade, he concluded with observing, that he could not conceive an act of more indispensable duty, upon every ground of humanity, justice, and policy, than that which was then proposed to the house.

Although Mr. Fox entirely coincided with Mr. Pitt on this occasion, and pronounced his arguments for the abolition to be unanswerable, yet such were the fears and prejudices of those who were concerned in the property and commerce of the West Indies, and such their influence in the house, that the motion was negatived by a majority of 163 to 88.

THE time being now arrived, at which the finance committee of 1786 had given reason to hope, that a permanent peace establishment would take place, a committee was appointed on the 8th of April, upon the motion of Mr. Pitt, to inquire, what had been the amount of the income and expenditure of the country during the last five years, and what might be expected to be the annual amount thereof in future; and also what alterations had taken

CHAP. place in the amount of the national debt,
 XIII. since the 5th of January 1786.

1791. From the report of this committee, which was presented to the house on the 10th of May, it appeared, that the average annual produce of the taxes for the last five years, had exceeded the estimate about 80,000*l.*; that all the expences of the same period, amounting to 88 millions, exclusive of the armament of 1790, for which a special provision was made, had been defrayed by the annual income and the sums received from extraordinary resources, with the addition of one million raised by a tontine, and of 187,000 *l.* raised by short annuities; that, according to the most correct estimate which could now be made, the annual income of the country would in future exceed the expences of a peace establishment, by 62,000*l.*; that 3,822,003*l.* had been applied to the diminution of the national debt, above the sums by which it had been increased; and that the stocks purchased by the commissioners, up to February the 1st, 1791, amounted to 6,772,350*l.* This report was in all its parts highly satisfactory, and confirmed the statements made by Mr. Pitt, from time to time, of the financial situation of the country.

On the 18th of May Mr. Pitt opened the

budget, and was enabled to provide for all the services of the year, amounting to 5,728,000*l.* without a loan, or any additional taxes.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

A petition had been presented to the house of commons, on the 7th of May 1789, by certain persons, calling themselves catholic dissenters ; implying, by that title, that they did not believe all the tenets generally maintained by roman catholics. The petitioners stated, that they, and other papists, were subject to various penal laws, on account of principles, which they were supposed to entertain, dangerous to society, and totally repugnant to political and civil liberty ; and therefore, they thought it due to their country, and to themselves, publicly to disclaim and protest against the five following doctrines : 1. That princes excommunicated by the pope, or by any authority of the see of Rome, may be deposed or murdered by their subjects, or other persons. 2. That implicit obedience is due to the orders and decrees of popes and general councils, even if they require open resistance to government, the subversion of the laws and liberties of the country, and the extermination of all persons not professing the roman catholic religion. 3. That the pope, by his spiritual power, can dispense with the obligations

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

of any compact or oath. 4. That not only the pope, but even a priest, has power, at his will and pleasure, to pardon sins, and consequently, can absolve from the guilt of perjury, rebellion, and high treason. 5. That faith is not to be kept with heretics*. The petitioners, conceiving that they, who thus solemnly disclaimed, and from their hearts abhorred, the above abominable and unchristian principles, ought not to be put upon a level with any other men, who might hold and profess those principles, humbly prayed, that the house would be pleased to grant them such relief, as, in its wisdom, it should deem to be just.

No notice was taken of this petition, till about the middle of the present session, when Mr. Mitford† moved for leave to bring in “a bill to relieve, upon conditions, and under restrictions, persons called protesting catholic dissenters, from certain penalties and disabilities, to which papists, or persons professing the popish religion, are by law subject.” The object of this bill was, not to repeal any existing laws, or to enable catholic dissenters

* These five doctrines are to be found in the decrees of councils, and other authentic documents of the church of Rome, and have always been considered as forming part of the faith of papists.

† Afterwards lord Redesdale.

to hold any public situation or office, from which they were previously excluded, but merely to exempt such papists from the operation of some of the numerous* severe statutes, which had been passed in different reigns† since the reformation, against persons professing the catholic religion, as should take an oath prescribed by the bill, renouncing the doctrines condemned in the above petition, and promising to bear true allegiance to the king, and to support the succession of the house of Hanover to the throne of these kingdoms‡.

Mr. Pitt declared himself friendly to this bill; and Mr. Fox approved it, as far as it went; but complained, that it did not by any means go far enough: he wished it to extend to all papists of every description. He maintained upon this, as he had done upon former

* In Burn's ecclesiastical law seventy pages are occupied in an enumeration of the penal laws in force against papists.

† The reigns of James the second and of George the third, are the only reigns since the time of queen Mary, in which some additional severity was not enacted against roman catholics.

‡ This oath was objected to, by three out of the four titular roman catholic bishops, most of the clergy, and a considerable number of the laity, as containing things contrary to the catholic faith, and as trenching upon the spiritual power of the head of the catholic church, and of its other pastors.

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

occasions, that the state had no right to inquire into the opinions of people, either political or religious; it had a right only to take cognizance of their actions. He considered all tests, both in religion and politics, as absurd and unwise, with the single exception of the oath of allegiance; and asserted, that in this kingdom, toleration was narrowed and confined, in shackles disgraceful to humanity; and that such persecution and oppression, upon the ground of religious opinion, did not exist in any other country, as existed in England. He rejoiced, however, that, in a few years, a general toleration must prevail; for the times were too much enlightened, to suffer men's minds to remain fettered, as they were at present. He thought, that the religious establishment of every country was to be governed, not so much with regard to the purity of its precepts, and truth of its doctrines, as with a view to that sort of religion, which was most likely to inculcate morality in the minds of the majority of its inhabitants.

Mr. Burke protested against these sentiments of Mr. Fox, affirming, that a state had full right to inquire into the religious opinions of all who lived under its protection; and that an uncontrollable superintending power of this kind was highly necessary for

the prosperity, safety, good morals, and happiness of the community. Opinions influenced the passions, and the passions governed the man. This was a natural effect, proceeding from a natural cause; and, such being the case, it was the interest and duty of government to maintain and exercise this power, under the guidance, indeed, of virtue and wisdom, candor and temperance.

CHAP.
XIII.
1791.

Mr. Pitt agreed with Mr. Burke, in his general doctrine; but thought that government could not be said to possess an uncontrollable superintending power over the religious opinions of its subjects.

The bill passed the house of commons, without a dissentient voice; and the only division in the house of lords was, upon the clause allowing roman catholics to practise at the bar, which was carried by a majority of 26 to 9.

While this bill was under discussion in the house of commons, an earnest wish was expressed by several members, and among the rest by Mr. Pitt, that the penal statutes, formerly enacted against papists, under circumstances very different from those of the present day, and which, on account of that change, had not been enforced for a considerable period, should be repealed; but no step was taken for that purpose in this session.

CHAP.

XIII

1791.

ALTHOUGH the house of commons had, soon after the Christmas recess, acquainted the house of lords, that they were ready to proceed with the trial of Mr. Hastings, and had determined to confine themselves to one charge in addition to those already heard; yet, as the length of time occupied by the committee of the house of lords in searching for precedents, prevented the court from sitting till the 23d of May, it was evidently impossible to terminate the business in the present session, if the prorogation took place at the usual time. Mr. Loveden, therefore, on the 27th of May, moved that an address should be presented to the king, humbly requesting his majesty not to prorogue parliament, till the house of lords had given judgment upon the articles of impeachment exhibited against Mr. Hastings. This motion was opposed on the ground of its interference with the king's prerogative, the uncertainty of the time the trial might still continue, the inconvenience to which the members would be subjected by attendance in the summer, and the interruption which would be caused to the administration of justice, by requiring the presence of the judges at the time they ought to be upon their circuits. Mr. Fox, thinking that

the motion went too far, although he approved its principle, proposed as an amendment, that the request to his majesty should be, that he would be pleased not to prorogue parliament, till such farther progress should be made in the trial, as would afford reason to expect, that it might be brought to a conclusion early in the next session. Mr. Pitt objected both to the motion and to the amendment; and the latter being rejected by a majority of 144 to 61, the former was negatived without a division. The evidence on the part of the prosecution, was finished on the 30th of May; and after an address from Mr. Hastings, in which he complained of the disgrace and hardships he was compelled to endure, in return for his long and meritorious services in India, the defence was postponed to the following session.

PARLIAMENT was prorogued on the 10th of June; and the king in his speech applauded the zeal with which the two houses had applied themselves to the different objects which had come under their consideration; and expressed his satisfaction with the measures which they had adopted. Upon the subject of foreign affairs, he only said that he was not yet enabled to inform parliament of the result

CHAP.
XIII.

1791.

of the steps which he had taken, with a view to the re-establishment of peace between Russia and the Porte.

THE king had repeatedly offered the Garter to Mr. Pitt, but could not prevail upon him to accept it; and, on his finally declining that honor, soon after the commencement of this session, it was conferred upon his brother, the earl of Chatham. This refusal, it was observed, “evinced the indifference or superiority of the minister to the highest external decoration and distinction, as powerfully as his renunciation of a lucrative office, at a much earlier period of his administration had proved his disinterestedness and contempt of emolument*.”

* Sketch of reign of Geo. III.

CHAPTER THE FOURTEENTH:

1791.

Treaties of Peace—War in India—Affairs of France—Riots at Birmingham—Meeting of Parliament—Finance Measures—Russian Armament—Police of the Metropolis—Penal Laws against Dissenters—Parliamentary Reform—Royal Proclamation—Conduct of Magistrates at Birmingham—Slave Trade—New Forest Bill—Prorogation of Parliament—Dismissal of Lord Thurlow—Conclusion of the War in India—Mr. Pitt appointed Warden of the Cinque Ports.

THE negotiations for peace between Austria and the Porte, mentioned in the last chapter, proceeded with all practicable dispatch at Sistovia; and the difficulties and obstacles being surmounted, through the intervention of the mediating powers, a definitive treaty upon fair and equitable terms was signed on the 4th of August.

CHAP.
XIV.
1791.

Immediately after the delivery of the king's message, relative to his majesty's unsuccessful endeavors to effect a pacification between Russia and the Porte, a fleet was expeditiously equipped by great exertions of the admiralty, for the purpose of giving weight to the repre-

CHAP.

XIV.

1791.

sentations of our envoy at the court of Petersburg; but Mr. Pitt had the mortification to find that this measure was by no means approved, either in parliament, or by the nation at large. The point in dispute not being of a nature to excite any general interest, the abstract principle of preserving the balance of power in Europe, and the prospective policy of guarding against future mischief, did not appear to the public sufficient reasons for incurring the risque and expences of war; and Mr. Pitt, perceiving that the armament was every day growing more unpopular, judged it expedient to abandon all idea of hostile interference. He formed, indeed, this determination so early, that, by sending a second messenger, he was able to prevent a strong memorial which he had dispatched to Petersburg, from being delivered to the Russian ministers; and, instead of it, he directed the British envoy to withdraw all opposition to the demand of the empress, to which he had before objected. The negotiation then proceeded without material difficulty; and a treaty of peace between Russia and the Porte, was signed on the 11th of August, leaving Catharine in possession of Oczakow and its dependencies. But though Mr. Pitt did not succeed in his immediate object, the disposition evinced

by the allied powers, and the part they took in the negotiation, were unquestionably of great assistance in procuring for Turkey better terms, than in her vanquished and exhausted state she could otherwise have obtained ; and these terms would have been still better, and perhaps his main purpose secured, if his exertions had not been counteracted, in the very extraordinary manner which will be hereafter related. From what passed during the war, the empress must also have been convinced, that she would not at any future time be suffered to carry into execution her ambitious views respecting the Turkish dominions, or so far to weaken any of the northern kingdoms, as to destroy the balance of power in that part of Europe.

CHAP.
XIV.
1791.

The king of Prussia had cordially co-operated with Great Britain, in the attempt to prevail upon the empress of Russia to relinquish her claim to Oczakow ; and the following private letter to Mr. Ewart, our minister at Berlin, from Mr. Pitt, after he had determined not to proceed to extremities, will best shew his views and feelings respecting this transaction, in his own words :

1791.

“ Hollwood, May 24, 1791.

“ My dear Sir,

“ You are so fully apprised, from your own observation, and from our repeated conversations *, of all which has passed here, in relation to affairs abroad, and of every sentiment of mine on the subject, that I can have nothing fresh to add in this letter.

“ I wish, however, to repeat my earnest and anxious desire, that you should find means of informing the king of Prussia, as openly and explicitly as possible, of the real state of the business, and of the true motives of our conduct. He knows, I am persuaded, too well, the effect which opinion and public impression must always have in this country, either to complain of our change of measures, or to wonder at it, if the true cause be fully explained to him. You perfectly know, that no man could be more eagerly bent than I was, on a steady adherence to the line which we had at first proposed, of going all lengths to enforce the terms of the strict status quo ; and I am still as much persuaded as ever, that if we could have carried the support of the country with us, the risque and expence of the strug-

* Mr. Ewart had been in England, and only lately returned to Berlin.

gle, even if Russia had not submitted without a struggle, would not have been more than the object was worth.

CHAP.
XIV.
1791.

“ But notwithstanding this was my own fixed opinion, I saw, with certainty, in a very few days after the subject was first discussed in parliament, that the prospect of obtaining a support, sufficient to carry this line through with vigor and effect, was absolutely desperate. We did indeed carry our question in the house of commons, by not an inconsiderable majority; and we shall, I am persuaded, continue successful in resisting all the attempts of opposition, as long as the negotiation is depending. But from what I know of the sentiments of the greatest part of that majority, and of many of the warmest friends of government, I am sure, that if, in persisting on the line of the status quo, we were to come to the point of actually calling for supplies to support the war, and were to state, as would then be indispensable, the precise ground on which it arose, that we should either not carry such a question, or carry it only by so weak a division, as would nearly amount to a defeat. This opinion I certainly formed neither hastily nor willingly; nor could I easily make a sacrifice more painful to myself, than I have done in yielding to it. But

CHAP.
XIV.

1791.

feeling the circumstances to be such as I have stated them, the only question that remained was, whether we should persist, at all hazards, in pushing our first determination, though without a chance of rendering it effectual to its object, or whether we should endeavor to do what appears to be the next best, when what we wished to do became impracticable.

“ To speak plainly : the obvious effect of our persisting would have been, to risque the existence of the present government, and with it, the whole of our system both at home and abroad. The personal part of this consideration, it would have been our duty to overlook, and I trust we should all have been ready to do so, if by any risque of our own, we could have contributed to the attainment of a great and important object for this country and its allies : but the consequence must evidently have been the reverse. The overthrow of our system here, at the same time that it hazarded driving the government at home into a state of absolute confusion, must have shaken the whole of our system abroad. It is not difficult to foresee what must have been the consequence to Prussia, of a change effected by an opposition to the very measures taken in concert with that court, and resting

on the avowed ground of our present system of alliance.

CHAP.
XIV.

1791.

“ On these considerations it is, that we have felt the necessity of changing our plan, and endeavoring to find the best expedient we can, for terminating the business, without extremities. Fortunately, the having succeeded in stopping the proposed representation to Russia, has prevented our being as pointedly committed as there was reason to apprehend we might have been. The modifications which have been suggested, the recommendation of them from Spain, the prospect of bringing that court to join in a subsequent guaranty of the Turkish possessions, and the chance of perhaps bringing the emperor to accede to our system, are all circumstances, which give an opening for extricating us from our present difficulty. You are so fully master of the whole of those details, that I shall not enlarge upon them. My great object is, that you should be able to satisfy the king of Prussia, of the *strong necessity*, under which we have acted, and that we really had no other choice, with a view either to his interests, or to those which we are most bound to consult at home. I am, &c.

W. PITT.”

1791.

IN consequence of this conclusion of the Russian business, the duke of Leeds thought proper to resign the seals, as foreign secretary of state, and lord Grenville was removed to the foreign from the home department, in which he was succeeded by Mr. Dundas. This last was considered as only a temporary appointment, it being wished by Mr. Pitt, that lord Cornwallis, who was expected soon to return from India, should be home secretary of state. He made this proposal to lord Cornwallis, who, in his answer, dated December 3d, 1791, informed him, that among other objections, it was impossible for him to leave India, while the war with Tippoo continued. On the 23d of the following month, he wrote again to Mr. Pitt, upon the subject, from the camp, near Outradoog; and referring to his former letter, said,—“ It has since occurred to me, that although my detention in India, must naturally do away the present question, I ought to have given my sentiments more explicitly on the subject at large, in order to prevent that favorable opinion, which is so highly flattering to me, from being the cause of trouble and embarrassment to you on a future occasion.

“ I will freely own to you, that if any thing

could induce me to come forward in a station of business and responsibility at home, it would be the allurements, that would be held out to my vanity, by being enrolled as a member of an administration, the uprightness of whose principles, and the wisdom and vigor of whose conduct, I so truly respect.

CHAP.

XIV.

1791.

“ I have, however, always been of opinion, that no man who has a regard for the consideration in which he is to stand with his country, should produce himself, even in the house of lords, as an efficient member of administration, without possessing such powers and habits of parliamentary debate, as would enable him to do justice to a good cause, and defend his measures, as well as those of his colleagues.

“ The maxim of *orator fit*, which has produced so much bad speaking, and so much ennui in this world, may be true in some instances, but he is not to be made *ex quovis ligno*; and I should doubt, whether the timber ought to undergo a seasoning of above half a century.

“ We can talk more fully upon this subject when we meet; and, in any event, you may be assured, that I shall at all times be ready to communicate any local knowledge I may possess, and to give my opinions both of Indian men and measures, in the most unre-

CHAP. served manner, to yourself and Mr. Dundas,
 XIV. and to those who act with you *.”

1791.

EARLY in the year 1791, lord Cornwallis took the command in person of the British forces in India, and entered the dominions of Tippoo Saib, without encountering any opposition. He marched towards Bangalore, the second place in point of importance in Mysore, and having beaten Tippoo in several engagements, made himself master both of the town and fort before the end of March. In the former, he found large magazines of grain, forage, and fuel; and, in the latter, immense quantities of military stores, and 124 pieces of cannon.

In the beginning of May, being joined by the nizam's cavalry, and having received a reinforcement of European and native troops, he left Bangalore, and after a fatiguing march of ten days reached Avakerry, about nine miles from Seringapatam. Tippoo had stationed his army in a strong position, at a moderate distance from the city, where he was attacked by lord Cornwallis, and so completely defeated, that he was compelled

* When lord Cornwallis returned from India, he declined the offer of being home secretary of state, and Mr. Dundas continued in that situation.

to take shelter under the batteries of his capital. Lord Cornwallis did not consider his present force sufficient to reduce Seringapatam, which was situated upon an island, and defended by strong and extensive fortifications; and, therefore, he determined to defer all farther operations, till he should be joined by the Mahrattas, whose arrival he expected shortly, and by general Abercrombie, who was advancing from the west. But, upon examination, it appeared, that his stock of provisions was extremely short; and it being impossible to procure a supply in the country he at present occupied, he marched towards Periapatam, where general Abercrombie had been ordered to wait for instructions. Unfortunately, the periodical rains, having set in earlier than usual, had rendered the river Cavery impassable, and he was under the mortifying necessity of sending directions to general Abercrombie to return to the Malabar coast, and of conducting his own army back to Bangalore. In his way thither, he met the Mahrattas coming to his support, and amounting to upwards of 30,000 men; but it being then too late, on account of the monsoons, to enter upon the siege of Seringapatam, the remainder of the year was employed in besieging and taking several fortresses, which

CHAP.

XIV.

1791.

gave the allies the command of all the surrounding country, and in making preparations for the next campaign.

THE national assembly of France commenced this year, with a decree announcing their intention to dissolve themselves, and call a new assembly, as soon as they should have completed the constitution, upon which they had of late been very busily employed, and had already passed many of its fundamental laws. In the mean time, fear was entertained, or at least pretended, that some attempt would be made at a counter-revolution, in consequence of an army, composed of emigrants, under the command of the prince of Condé, being collected on the borders of Alsace, and of German troops being marched into the same neighborhood; and accordingly a decree was passed for a considerable augmentation of the army. But though great jealousy prevailed, the comparative tranquillity of Paris, and the utter annihilation of all substantial power in the king, had led the ruling party to allow his majesty more personal liberty than he enjoyed, when he was first removed to Paris.

It being known, that the royal family proposed to pass the Easter holidays at St. Cloud,

a report was instantly spread, that the king was about to fly the country, and when the royal carriages appeared before the palace on the 18th of April, the populace assembled in great numbers, and would not suffer them to move. La Fayette called out the national guards, for the purpose of enabling his majesty to proceed to St. Cloud ; but the soldiers, refusing to obey their commander, presented their bayonets to the postillions, while the people cut the traces. The king, at length alighting from his carriage, returned into the palace ; and the next morning he went to the national assembly, and stated the insult which had been offered to him : but all interposition on their part being declined, he was reduced to the necessity of yielding to the will of the mob, and relinquishing his intended excursion.

This daring and wanton outrage had the effect of considerably increasing emigration ; and it probably determined the king to withdraw from his capital, where he had not only lost all authority, but was exposed to the grossest indignity and even to personal danger. After weighing and reflecting upon a variety of plans and proposals, it was at length settled, that his majesty should go to Montmedi*,

* Montmedi is 27 miles from Luxemburg, and 135 north east from Paris.

CHAP. a fortified town upon the frontiers, with
 XIV. a view of collecting there the real friends
 1791. of rational liberty and mixed monarchy,
 and of making one effort to rescue the country from its present calamitous situation, and to avert the still greater evils with which it was threatened. Arrangements being made for this journey, the king set out privately in the night of the 20th of June, with the queen and his two children; but being recognized at Varennes, only a few leagues from the place of their destination, they were stopped and compelled to return to Paris, under an escort of the national guards. The king and queen were confined in separate apartments of the Thuilleries; and the dauphin was placed under the care of tutors, appointed by the national assembly, who were to educate him in what were called constitutional principles.

From the unfortunate failure of this attempt, the enemies of the king derived great accession of strength, and now proceeded in forming the constitutional code, with scarcely any opposition. The loyal members, however, of the national assembly issued a declaration, in which they apologized for their acquiescence in measures which they totally disapproved, and lamented the afflicting spec-

tacle which they had the misfortune to witness. After pronouncing the treatment of the king and the royal family, who had, they said, been conducted to Paris as prisoners, and were there guarded by soldiers not under the king's command, to be in direct contradiction to laws recently passed, they asked, "Amidst these outrages, what has become of the monarchy? The decrees of the national assembly have centered in themselves all the royal power; the seal of the state has been deposited upon their table; their decrees are rendered valid, without requiring any farther sanction; they give direct orders to all the agents of the executive power; they impose in their own name, oaths, in which Frenchmen do not find even the name of their king; commissioners, who have received their authority from them alone, traverse the provinces in order to exact oaths and give directions to the army: thus, at the moment the inviolability of the king was annulled, monarchy was destroyed; the appearance of royalty no longer exists; a republican interim has succeeded." This declaration was signed by 290 members of the national assembly, and contained a just description of the degraded state to which the king was reduced.

CHAP.

XIV.

1791.

The constitutional code was completed early

CHAP.
XIV.

1791.

in September; and while the king was actually deprived of personal liberty, the monarchy was nominally retained, the ruling party not thinking it expedient at present to get rid of all the forms of kingly government. The authority given to the king by the new constitution, even if he had been suffered to exercise it without restraint, would have been utterly inadequate to the government of the extensive and populous country of France; and its other defects and absurdities were numerous and palpable in the extreme. His majesty, however, had no alternative, but to accept this code; and his acceptance of it was announced to all the courts of Europe.

The assembly, which is generally distinguished by the name of the constituent assembly, was dissolved on the 30th of September, having previously ordered, without the consent of the king, another assembly to be elected according to the provisions of their constitutional code.

THE language of Mr. Fox, and his party in parliament, encouraged the members of the political societies and clubs in London, and different parts of the kingdom, which had considerably increased in number, to avow, without any reserve, their admiration of the

French revolution, and to give strong intimations of their principles and wishes with respect to their own country, the government of which they represented as standing in need of a radical reform. They entered into a close correspondence with the Jacobin clubs in France ; and there seems to have been a mutual communication of sentiments and advice, for the purpose of promoting their respective views. “ We assure you,” say the French Jacobins, in a letter to their friends in England, dated July 30th, 1791, “ that we have examined with care, the various objects, which your preceding letters confided to our solicitude, and that we have followed your suggestions in the different committees of the national assembly.” Upon the king’s flight from his capital, the Jacobins in Paris addressed a circular letter to all the societies affiliated to them, a copy of which was not only sent to the Revolution society in London, but openly published in our newspapers, as received by them. Besides this Revolution society, there was the Constitutional society, which equally favored the French revolution, the principal members of both being dissenters from the church of England ; and there was also a third, called the Unitarian society, consisting entirely, as its name implied, of

CHAP.
XIV.

1791.

dissenters, the proceedings of which were by no means confined to religious subjects. At a meeting of this last society, in the beginning of the present year, at which Dr. Priestley presided, Dr. Kippis, after pronouncing a high panegyrick upon the French revolution, as “an event calculated to ameliorate the condition of men over all the earth,” proposed to commemorate, by convivial meetings, the anniversary of the destruction of the Bastile, on the following 14th of July. This proposition, being seconded by Dr. Towers*, in a speech containing the same sentiments, was unanimously adopted.

Dr. Priestley intended to celebrate this festival at Birmingham, the place of his accustomed residence, where the strong language, in which he had lately avowed his political and religious sentiments, had rendered him extremely unpopular. His discourse, delivered to the supporters of the New College at Hackney†, on the 27th of April, seemed to have been composed under the full impression, that a great revolution was approaching both in church and state; and that the

* Dr. Priestley, Dr. Kippis, and Dr. Towers were dissenting ministers.

† Instituted for the education of dissenters, principally those designed for the ministry.

institution at Hackney would shortly become instrumental to the advancement and perfection of civil and religious liberty. In his funeral sermon on Dr. Price, he boasted of the interest which his deceased friend had taken in the events of the French revolution; and compared his death to that of "a warrior dying in the moment of victory." Another work of his, professedly political, published at the beginning of the same year, contained many passages still more explicit: he praised the Americans, as having set a glorious example to France, and to the whole world, in forming "a completely new government on the principles of equal liberty, and the rights of man—without nobles—without bishops—and without a king." This country he declared to be hastening with an accelerated motion towards a great crisis, similar to that which had occasioned the French revolution; and if it should be as much benefited by the result, as France, in his opinion, was likely to be, he did not scruple to pronounce, "that great crisis, dreadful as it might be in prospect, a consummation devoutly to be wished."

CHAP.
XIV.
1791.

A few days before the 14th of July, the following hand-bill was circulated in the town of Birmingham:

CHAP.
XIV.

1791.

“ My countrymen,

“ The second year of Gallic liberty is nearly expired. At the commencement of the third, on the 14th of this month, it is devoutly to be wished, that every enemy to civil and religious despotism would give their sanction to the common cause, by a public celebration of the anniversary. Remember, that on the 14th of July, the Bastile, that high altar and castle of despotism, fell ; remember the enthusiasm, peculiar to the cause of liberty, with which it was attacked ; remember that generous humanity, that taught the oppressed, groaning under the weight of insulted rights, to spare the lives of oppressors. Extinguish the mean prejudices of nations, and let your members be collected and sent as a free-will offering to the national assembly. But is it possible to forget, that your own parliament is venal, your ministers hypocritical, your clergy legal oppressors, the reigning family extravagant, the crown of a certain great personage becoming every day too weighty for the head that wears it, too weighty for the people that gave it. Your taxes partial and oppressive—your representation a cruel insult upon the sacred rights of property, religion, and freedom. But, on the 14th of this month, prove to the

sycophants of the day, that you reverence the olive branch, that you will sacrifice to public tranquillity, till the majority shall exclaim, “The peace of slavery is worse than the war of freedom : of that day let tyrants beware.”

CHAP.
XIV.
1791.

This hand-bill* caused so great a ferment among the inhabitants, who were in general firmly attached to the constitution in church and state, that the idea of the celebration was at first relinquished; but unfortunately, the original design was afterwards revived, and a determination formed to hold the meeting, whatever might be the consequence.

On the appointed day crowds of people surrounded the door of the hotel where the dinner was prepared, and the company entered amidst hisses and other marks of disapprobation. Towards evening the tumult increased, and the meeting broke up at an early hour. Soon after, the populace demolished the windows of the hotel; and proceeding from one outrage to another, destroyed two meeting houses, and the dwelling house of Dr. Priestley,

* As soon as an inquiry was set on foot to discover the author of this hand-bill, with a view to his being prosecuted, a dissenting minister, who had long resided at Birmingham, and on whom suspicion had fallen, suddenly disappeared, went abroad, and was never more heard of in this country.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

and of several other persons, both in the town and neighborhood, who were known to be friendly to the principles of the French revolution. The exertions of the civil magistrates to disperse or check the rioters, were entirely fruitless; and these unwarrantable excesses continued at intervals from the Thursday to the Sunday evening, when three troops of horse soldiers arrived, and tranquillity was at length restored. Some of the ringleaders were apprehended and tried, three of whom suffered death; and the losses of individuals, according to the wise provision of our laws, were made good by the hundred in which the buildings were situated*.

PARLIAMENT met on the 31st of January 1792, and the king in his speech from the throne, after mentioning the marriage of the duke of York with the princess royal of Prussia, and the pacification effected in the north of Europe, through the mediation of himself and his allies, informed the two houses, that though the war in India was not terminated, the suc-

* Dr. Priestley laid his damages at 4,122 *l.* 11 *s.* 9 *d.*; but the sum awarded him by the jury, was only 2,502 *l.* 18 *s.* The deductions were on account of MSS. of his own composition, which he valued at 420 *l.* 15 *s.* for which the jury would allow nothing, and of a philosophical apparatus, which he valued much higher than the jury thought right.

cess, which had already attended the British arms, afforded reasonable ground to hope, that it might speedily be brought to an honorable conclusion. His majesty next remarked, that as the general state of affairs upon the continent appeared to promise a continuance of the present tranquillity, some reduction, he conceived, might be made in the naval and military establishments, which, with the progressive increase of the revenue, might enable parliament to repeal a part of the existing taxes, and at the same time give additional efficacy to the plan for the liquidation of the national debt. With a view to the same important object, he recommended also the adoption of such measures as the state of the funds, and of public credit, might render practicable and expedient, towards the diminution of the interest of the redeemable annuities; and at the end of his speech, he observed, that the continued and progressive improvement in the internal situation of the country, must confirm and increase the steady and zealous attachment of his subjects to that constitution, which had been found, by long experience, to unite the inestimable blessings of liberty and order; and to which, under the favor of Providence, all our other advantages were principally to be ascribed.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

To the usual address of thanks, in which all the different topics of the speech were noticed, an amendment was moved, the purport of which was, to omit that part of it which congratulated his majesty upon the successes in India, “under the able conduct of lord Cornwallis,” and to substitute a paragraph, expressive of regret, that the prospect of a speedy termination of the war, held out by his majesty in his speech at the opening of the last session of parliament, had not been realized. In support of this amendment, it was urged, that no advantage had been gained in India, which would warrant the congratulations contained in the address; and that lord Cornwallis, having failed in the main object of the campaign, the capture of Seringapatam, could not be considered a fit object of commendation. But, on the other hand, it was contended, that since the commencement of hostilities, we had detached from Tippoo all the powers of the Malabar coast, whose assistance had been so useful to Hyder Ally in his wars with the English; that we had formed a confederacy with the nizam and the Mahrattas; that we had gained several important victories; and that the enemy, having lost all the other considerable places in his dominions, was confined to a narrow district round his capital; all

which circumstances constituted a fair ground for congratulation, and proved, that the war had been conducted with ability; particularly, as nothing but casualties, which no human foresight could have guarded against, had prevented the capture of Seringapatam.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

Strictures were also made by Mr. Grey and Mr. Fox, upon the suggestion from his majesty, that it might be proper to relieve the country from the burden of some of the existing taxes. To originate taxes, and to originate the repeal of taxes, they stated to be the exclusive rights of the house of commons; and any encroachment upon either of those rights was, in fact, a breach of privilege. Could it be reasonably supposed, they asked, that the constitution had conferred upon the representatives of the people, the unthankful office of imposing taxes, and of enacting severe laws to give them efficacy, while it invested the crown with the popular prerogative of proposing their repeal.

Mr. Pitt admitted, that the right of originating, as well as the right of repealing, taxes, undoubtedly belonged to the house of commons: nevertheless, he maintained, that, as the demand, which occasioned taxes, and the recommendation of measures which required money to support them, came from the

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

crown, his majesty, in stating the improved condition of the revenue, might constitutionally express his hope, that so fortunate a circumstance would enable the house to lighten the burdens, which the exigency of the times had previously induced it to impose*. Had the speech specified the particular taxes, which might be repealed, or even mentioned the precise sum by which the national income might be diminished, Mr. Pitt acknowledged, that there would have been reasonable cause for jealousy; but his majesty had only, in the most general and unexceptionable terms, called the attention of the house to the practicability, in the present state of this country, and of Europe, of relieving his people, in some degree, from the pressure under which they at present labored.

The amendment was negatived by a majority of 209 to 85; and the address passed.

* In a subsequent debate this session, Mr. Rose observed, that, except the reduction of the land-tax, there were only two instances of a repeal of taxes in the present century, without substituting others in their room, both of which had been more directly and pointedly recommended from the throne than the present. In fact, the land-tax could not be said to be repealed, as it was voted annually, though the amount formerly varied from one to four shillings in the pound, according to the exigencies of the country.

THE first business brought forward by Mr. Pitt, in this session, was the budget; upon which occasion, he not only described, fully and minutely, the present flourishing condition of the revenue, trade, and manufactures of the kingdom, but entered also into a profound and able investigation of the causes which had produced those beneficial effects. After a few introductory observations upon the welcome intelligence announced in his majesty's speech, relative to the improvement in the public finances, he informed the house, that the income of the country, in the last year, had amounted to 16,730,000*l.*, which exceeded the income of the year preceding, by 300,000*l.* and the average of the last four years by more than half a million. There having been a constantly progressive increase in the income of the country for the last four years, he considered himself fully justified, in considering the average of those years, namely, 16,212,000*l.* as the future annual produce of the revenue, and in founding his calculations and measures, upon that supposition. Allowing for the necessary alterations in certain respects, which he specified, since he last addressed the house upon this subject, he estimated the future annual expenditure of the country, at

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

15,811,000*l.* which was 401,000*l.* less than its annual income. There being that disposable surplus of income, he proposed to add 200,000*l.* a year to the sinking fund, and to take off taxes to the same amount, selecting such as would afford the most extensive relief to the public, especially to the poorest and most industrious classes of the community. The sum remaining in the exchequer unappropriated, enabled him farther to propose, that in the present year, 400,000*l.*, in addition to the annual million, should be applied to the reduction of the national debt, and 100,000*l.* towards the expences of the Spanish armament, by which means the additional tax upon malt, imposed last year, might be immediately repealed. The other taxes which he proposed to repeal, were those upon female servants, carts and waggons, houses having less than seven windows, and the last half-penny per pound upon candles. He enumerated the various articles of the supply of the current year, which amounted to 5,654,000*l.*; and of the ways and means, which amounted to 5,691,000*l.* leaving an excess of 37,000*l.* in favor of the ways and means. The loyalist debentures were not included in the supply, or the profits of the lottery in the ways and means, because the latter were to

be applied towards the discharge of the former; and he thought that the whole of these debentures would be liquidated in the four succeeding years; after which, the profits of the lottery, being about 300,000*l.* a year, might, with the consent of parliament, be equally divided between the sinking fund and the repeal of taxes. He held out a most encouraging prospect of still farther relief, from the repeal of taxes in future years; and though he was aware of the many contingencies, which might, by disturbing the public tranquillity, and interrupting the present prosperity of the nation, prevent any measure of that kind, there never was a time, he said, in the history of this country, when, from the situation of Europe, we might more reasonably expect fifteen years of peace, than at the present moment. He went through a variety of calculations respecting the operation of the sinking fund, which he expected would reach its maximum of four millions in 1808; and he intimated his intention of submitting to the house, on a subsequent day, a plan relative to future loans, in case of war. He then pointed out the gradual and uniform increase which had taken place in all the principal branches of the revenue, and likewise in the exports and imports; and after this most satisfactory

CHAP. detail, which, from a singular perspicuity of
 XIV. arrangement and language, was intelligible to
 1792. all who heard it, he proceeded in the following manner :

“ Having stated the increase of revenue, and shewn that it has been accompanied by a proportionate increase of the national wealth, commerce, and manufactures, I feel that it is natural to ask, what have been the peculiar circumstances to which these effects are to be ascribed ?

“ The first and most obvious answer, which every man’s mind will suggest to this question, is, that it arises from the natural industry and energy of the country : But what is it which has enabled that industry and energy to act with a vigor, so far beyond the example of former periods ? The improvement which has been made in the mode of carrying on almost every branch of manufacture, and the degree to which labor has been abridged, by the invention and application of machinery, have, undoubtedly, had a considerable share in producing such important effects. We have besides seen, during this period, more than at any former time, the effect of one circumstance which has principally tended to raise this country to its mercantile pre-eminence.— I mean that peculiar degree of credit which,

by a two-fold operation, at once gives additional facility and extent to the transactions of our merchants at home, and enables them to obtain a proportional superiority in markets abroad. This advantage has been most conspicuous during the latter part of the period to which I have referred; and it is constantly increasing, in proportion to the prosperity which it contributes to create.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“ In addition to all this, the exploring and enterprizing spirit of our merchants has been seen in the extension of our navigation and our fisheries, and the acquisition of new markets in different parts of the world; and, undoubtedly, those efforts have been not a little assisted by the additional intercourse with France, in consequence of the commercial treaty; an intercourse, which, though probably checked and abated by the distractions now prevailing in that kingdom, has furnished a great additional incitement to industry and exertion.

“ But there is still another cause, even more satisfactory than these, because it is of a still more extensive and permanent nature; that constant accumulation of capital, that continual tendency to increase, the operation of which is universally seen in a greater or less proportion, whenever it is not obstructed by

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

some public calamity, or by some mistaken and mischievous policy, but which must be conspicuous and rapid indeed in any country, which has once arrived at an advanced state of commercial prosperity. Simple and obvious as this principle is, and felt and observed as it must have been in a greater or less degree, even from the earliest periods, I doubt whether it has ever been fully developed and sufficiently explained, except in the writings of an author of our own times, now unfortunately no more, (I mean the author of a celebrated treatise on the Wealth of Nations) whose extensive knowledge of detail, and depth of philosophical research, will, I believe, furnish the best solution to every question connected with the history of commerce, or with the systems of political economy. This accumulation of capital arises from the continual application of a part, at least, of the profit obtained in each year, to increase the total amount of capital, to be employed in a similar manner, and with continued profit, in the year following. The great mass of the property of the nation is thus constantly increasing at compound interest; the progress of which, in any considerable period is what, at first view, would appear incredible. Great as have been the effects of this cause already, they must be

greater in future; for its powers are augmented in proportion as they are exerted. It acts with a velocity, continually accelerated, with a force continually increased.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

Mobilitate viget, viresque acquirit eundo.

It may, indeed, as we have ourselves experienced, be checked or retarded by particular circumstances—it may for a time be interrupted, or even overpowered; but, where there is a fund of productive labor and active industry, it can never be totally extinguished. In the season of the severest calamity and distress, its operations will still counteract and diminish their effects; in the first returning interval of prosperity, it will be active to repair them. If we look to a period like the present, of continued tranquillity, the difficulty will be to imagine limits to its operation. None can be found, while there exists at home any one object of skill or industry short of its utmost possible perfection; one spot of ground in the country capable of higher cultivation and improvement; or while there remains abroad any new market that can be explored, or any existing market that can be extended. From the intercourse of commerce, it will in some measure participate in the growth of other nations, in all the possible varieties of

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

their situations. The rude wants of countries emerging from barbarism, and the artificial and increasing demands of luxury and refinement, will equally open new sources of treasure, and new fields of exertion in every state of society, and in the remotest quarters of the globe. It is this principle, which, I believe, according to the uniform result of history and experience, maintains on the whole, in spite of the vicissitudes of fortune, and the disasters of empires, a continued course of successive improvement in the general order of the world.

“Such are the circumstances which appear to me to have contributed most immediately to our present prosperity. But these are again connected with others yet more important.

“They are obviously and necessarily connected with the duration of peace, the continuance of which, on a secure and permanent footing, must ever be the first object of the foreign policy of this country. They are connected still more with its internal tranquillity, and with the natural effects of a free, but well regulated, government. What is it which has produced in the last hundred years, so rapid an advance, beyond what can be traced in any other period of our history? What but that,

during that time, under the mild and just government of the illustrious princes of the family now on the throne, a general calm has prevailed through the country, beyond what was ever before experienced; and we have also enjoyed, in greater purity and perfection, the benefit of those original principles of our constitution, which were ascertained and established by the memorable events that closed the century preceding? This is the great and governing cause, the operation of which has given scope to all the other circumstances which I have enumerated.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“It is this union of liberty with law, which, by raising a barrier equally firm against the encroachments of power, and the violence of popular commotion, affords to property its just security, produces the exertion of genius and labor, the extent and solidity of credit, the circulation and increase of capital; which forms and upholds the national character, and sets in motion all the springs which actuate the great mass of the community through all its various descriptions.

“The laborious industry of those useful and extensive classes (who will, I trust, be in a peculiar degree this day the object of the consideration of the house) the peasantry and yeomanry of the country; the skill and inge-

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

nuity of the artificer; the experiments and improvements of the wealthy proprietor of land; the bold speculations and successful adventures of the opulent merchant and enterprising manufacturer;—these are all to be traced to the same source, and all derive from hence both their encouragement and their reward. On this point, therefore, let us principally fix our attention; let us preserve this first and most essential object, and every other is in our power! Let us remember, that the love of the constitution, though it acts as a sort of natural instinct in the hearts of Englishmen, is strengthened by reason and reflection, and every day confirmed by experience; that it is a constitution which we do not merely admire from traditional reverence, which we do not flatter from prejudice or habit, but which we cherish and value, because we know that it practically secures the tranquillity and welfare both of individuals and of the public, and provides, beyond any other frame of government which has ever existed, for the real and useful ends, which form at once the only true foundation, and only rational object, of all political societies.

“I have now nearly closed all the considerations which I think it necessary to offer to the committee. I have endeavored to give a dis-

tinct view of the surplus arising on the comparison of the permanent income (computed on the average which I have stated) with what may be expected to be the permanent expenditure in time of peace ; and I have also stated the comparison of the supply, and of the ways and means of this particular year. I have pointed out the leading and principal articles of revenue, in which the augmentation has taken place, and the corresponding increase in the trade and manufactures of the country ; and finally, I have attempted to trace these effects to their causes, and to explain the principles which appear to account for the striking and favorable change in our general situation. From the result of the whole, I trust, I am entitled to conclude, that the scene, which we are now contemplating, is not the transient effect of accident, not the short-lived prosperity of a day, but the genuine and natural result of regular and permanent causes. The season of our severe trial is at an end, and we are at length relieved, not only from the dejection and gloom, which, a few years since, hung over the country, but from the doubt and uncertainty, which, even for a considerable time after our prospect had begun to brighten, still mingled with the hopes and expectations of the public. We may yet,

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

indeed, be subject to those fluctuations which often happen in the affairs of a great nation, and which it is impossible to calculate or foresee ; but as far as there can be any reliance on human speculations, we have the best ground, from the experience of the past, to look with satisfaction to the present, and with confidence to the future : ‘ nunc demum redit animus, cum non spem modo ac votum securitas publica, sed ipsius voti fiduciam et robur assumpserit.’ This is a state not of hope only, but of attainment ; not barely the encouraging prospect of future advantage, but the solid and immediate benefit of present and actual possession.

“ On this situation and this prospect, fortunate beyond our most sanguine expectations, let me congratulate you, and the house, and my country ! And before I conclude, let me express my earnest wish, my anxious and fervent prayer, that now in this period of our success, for the sake of the present age and of posterity, there may be no intermission in that vigilant attention of parliament to every object connected with the revenue, the resources, and the credit of the state, which has carried us through all our difficulties, and led to this rapid and wonderful improvement ; that still keeping pace with the exertions of the

legislature, the genius and spirit, the loyalty and public virtue of a great and free people, may long deserve and (under the favor of Providence) may insure the continuance of this unexampled prosperity; and that Great Britain may thus remain for ages, in the possession of these distinguished advantages, under the protection and safeguard of that constitution, to which (as we have been truly told from the throne) they are principally to be ascribed; and which is indeed the great source, and the best security, of all that can be dear and valuable to a nation."

Mr. Pitt concluded, by moving his first resolution, for the repeal of the last additional tax upon malt.

Mr. Sheridan noticed the impression made upon the house, by this brilliant and interesting speech; and Mr. Fox paid a high compliment, both to the eloquence of Mr. Pitt, and to the philosophical principles of commerce and political government, upon which he had argued. Mr. Pitt, he said, had enumerated the causes of national prosperity, with truth and splendor; he subscribed to his statement most cordially; and if he did not himself go over the same ground, it was because he had nothing to add to what had been already said, nor could he hope to express it better: he

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

begged to be understood, that these observations were applicable to the prosperity of the country, not merely to the prosperity of the revenue.

Mr. Sheridan, however, denied, that the state of the revenue would warrant a repeal of taxes, and promised to move, on a future day, for the appointment of a committee to inquire into the real amount of the public income and expenditure*. At present, he contented himself with asserting, that a repeal of taxes would, under any circumstances, be an infringement of the principle of redemption, which required the whole surplus, whether large or small, to be applied to that purpose. He thought also, that the unfunded debt ought to be discharged before any part of the funded debt was liquidated.

Mr. Pitt replied, that the house was not pledged to apply the whole of the surplus of the revenue, whatever it might be, to the redemption of the national debt; nor had he ever declared or entertained any intention of recommending a measure of that sort. He persevered in affirming, that even upon the disadvantageous principle of taking the average

* Mr. Sheridan never performed this promise; whence we may infer, that he despaired of invalidating any part of Mr. Pitt's statements or conclusions.

of the last four years, during which the income of the country had uniformly increased, there was a surplus sufficient to justify the appropriation of the sum he had proposed to the discharge of the national debt, and the repeal of the taxes he had mentioned, which would operate materially to the relief of the people ; and, for the proof of that assertion, he appealed to the authentic documents before the house. He had, he said, several reasons for preferring to pay off the funded rather than the unfunded debt, the principal of which was, that by so doing, he should sooner be able to reduce the four per cents, which were then redeemable ; and afterwards to pay off as much of the national debt, as would enable him to redeem the five per cents, which could not be done until 25 millions of the funded debt were actually paid off*.

Mr. Fox candidly admitted, that the reduction of the four per cents would be a most politic and proper measure. According to the calculation he had made, the nation would draw from it an annual benefit of upwards of 260,000*l*. He wished, that Mr. Pitt had explained more fully his ideas upon that subject. A well-concerted plan should have his sup-

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

* It was under this condition that the 5 per cents were originally established.

port. The rise of the funds, in his judgment, was a great national benefit; for, though it threw obstacles in the way of paying off the national debt, it invigorated every branch of our prosperity. In proportion as the funds were high, money for every object of commercial enterprize, of manufacture, of agricultural improvement, of trade and industry of all kinds, became more easily attainable. It added, therefore, to the capital of the nation; it enlarged the sphere of action; and produced the wealth, which more than counterbalanced the difference which we had to pay in buying up the debts. If, indeed, we considered the amount of our debt, the principal was certainly increased by the rise of the funds. But though the principal was clearly more now than in the year 1786, the annuity paid by the nation was less; and to the annuity he always looked, as the true debt which was our enemy.

All the resolutions, moved by Mr. Pitt, were unanimously agreed to; and all the bills founded upon them, for applying the sum of 400,000*l.* to the liquidation of the national debt, and for the repeal of the taxes upon malt, female servants, carts and waggons, windows, and candles, as proposed by him, passed without any opposition.

It was Mr. Pitt's intention, in the early part of this year, to propose a reduction of the 4 per cents to $3\frac{1}{2}$ per cents, and I have found among his papers the draft of a bill for that purpose; but, upon farther consideration, he determined to defer the measure to the next session, when he hoped to be able to reduce them to three per cents. This change of plan was very unfortunate; for, in consequence of a series of most extraordinary and unexpected events, it has happened, that from that time to the present, a period of 29 years, the state of the funds has never allowed any reduction to take place in the four per cents, or even in the five per cents, since they have been redeemable.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

WE have seen, that Mr. Pitt, in his speech of the 17th of February, alluded to a measure he had in contemplation relative to future loans; and in the following month, he introduced a highly important bill upon that subject. In 1786, he had established an adequate sinking fund for the liquidation of the then existing national debt; but he was apprehensive, that in case of a new war, of considerable length, and consequently producing large annual additions to the public debt, the sinking fund might not operate with sufficient effect

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

to prevent national bankruptcy. This tremendous calamity the country had narrowly escaped at the end of the late war; and it was Mr. Pitt's object to guard, as far as human foresight could reach, against a recurrence of that danger. With this view he now proposed, that, whenever a loan should be hereafter made, one per cent upon the new stock thus created, besides the dividends, should be raised and applied by the commissioners for the reduction of the national debt, in the same manner, and under the same regulations, as the original million. By this provision every loan would be accompanied by its own sinking fund, which would operate at compound interest, and discharge the debt in 47 years, from the time it was incurred, at the longest; that is, supposing a three per cent fund paid off at par, and in every other case, in a shorter period*.

The bill for this purpose passed the house of commons, without any serious difficulty; but in the house of lords, the principal clause was, to the astonishment of every one, violent-

* It is scarcely possible that the whole of any debt should be paid off at par, because the stock, when created, is always under par, and the one per cent is applied immediately. No purchase in the 3 per cents has been made at par since the passing of this bill, or even since the establishment of the sinking fund in 1786.

ly reprobated by the lord chancellor (lord CHAP.
XIV.
1792. Thurlow) in the committee on the 14th of May, although he had not previously given the slightest intimation, either in public or private, of his disapprobation of the bill. He said, that such a provision would answer no good purpose, while it exhibited a degree of presumption and arrogance in dictating to future parliaments, which, he trusted, their lordships would never countenance. He ridiculed the idea of prescribing to ministers, the precise mode in which they were to act twenty or thirty years hence; and represented it as idle to suppose, that they would follow the directions of the present parliament—"none but a novice, a sycophant, a mere reptile of a minister, would allow this act to prevent him from doing, what, in his own judgment, circumstances might require at the time; and a change in the situation of the country may render that, which is proper at one time, inapplicable at another. In short, the scheme is nugatory and impracticable—the inaptness of the project is equal to the vanity of the attempt." This opposition not being expected, the clause was carried by a majority of only 6, the numbers being 28 and 22. The bill, however, passed without any other division.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

The history of the world would scarcely supply an instance of a political measure more truly characteristic of a great and provident mind, than that which has been now described; and it is the more to be admired, as Mr. Pitt, at the moment he proposed it, declared his decided opinion, that the state of Europe promised a long continuance of peace to England. Such a season of settled tranquillity he wisely thought the fittest time for guarding against the most formidable of all the evils of war; and that to which this country would have been peculiarly liable, in case of a sudden rupture with any foreign power.

This bill may be considered as extending the principle of the bill of 1786, which it resembled in its simplicity, and in the ease and certainty with which it might be carried into execution. Notwithstanding lord Thurlow's prediction, it has in fact been invariably adhered to in all the numerous and heavy loans, and under the greatest pressure of pecuniary embarrassment, during the whole of the revolutionary war. These two bills together form a complete practical system for the extinction of national debts, both present and future; and have enabled us to support an accumulation of burdens, unexampled in any other country, ancient or modern. To their joint

operation we owe the means of bringing the protracted and formidable struggle, in which we have been lately engaged, to so glorious a termination—to them we are indebted for our very existence as an independent kingdom. Nor is this all; our resources, thus upholden and protected, have afforded assistance to other nations, and essentially contributed to save them also from ruin and slavery;—but it would be impossible to point out all the beneficial consequences of this system of finance, without anticipating the events of a subsequent period.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

It has been observed, that, in the debates of the last session, Mr. Pitt did not feel himself at liberty to state the particular points, which had induced his majesty's ministers to advise an augmentation of the naval force of the kingdom; but the negotiations at Petersburg being now brought to a conclusion, he presented to the house such documents, as he thought sufficient to convey a complete knowledge of the whole transaction. The members of opposition, however, aware that Mr. Pitt had not, on this occasion, been favored with that general approbation, either of the people or of parliament, which had attended most of the measures of his administra-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

tion, determined to bring the subject again under the discussion of the house of commons; and, if possible, to obtain a vote of censure upon his conduct. As a preparatory step, Mr. Grey complained, that the papers laid upon the table, did not contain all the information which the house had a right to expect, and that Mr. Pitt had kept back such parts of the correspondence as would tend to criminate himself: he therefore moved five several addresses to the king, requesting that his majesty would be pleased to communicate to the house, copies of the whole correspondence, of every description, in which this country had been engaged, with Russia, the Porte, Prussia, Spain, and Denmark, relative to the termination of the war between the first two of those powers.

Mr. Pitt objected to the farther production of papers, upon the same principle on which he had resisted a similar motion in the case of the Spanish armament; contending, that the papers, already upon the table, would enable the house to form a judgment upon the conduct of administration. It fully appeared from them, he said, what it was that the empress had originally demanded, what it was that the British government endeavored to secure, and what were in fact the terms of

pacification ultimately agreed upon. Better terms, he affirmed, might have been obtained, had it not been for certain circumstances of notoriety, hostile to the political interests of the country, and which might perhaps give rise to a more serious discussion at another time. He did not profess to communicate to the house, the whole of the negotiation—such a communication would be highly improper. Every thing which ought to be disclosed, was disclosed; and those parts only were reserved, which could not, in justice to foreign kingdoms, be revealed, or which, if known, would endanger the situation of our public alliances. A compliance with the present motions, would be fatal to all attempts to carry on any negotiation with other states in future. He maintained, that the refusal of unnecessary papers was perfectly consistent with the principles of our constitution; and that, without a reasonable share of confidence in ministers, the functions of executive government could not be discharged, or the relations of continental connexions be supported with advantage to the country. The first motion was rejected by a majority of 235 to 120, and the others were negatived without a division.

On the 29th of February, Mr. Whitbread

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

brought forward three motions, the first of which asserted, that Oczakow and its district were not of sufficient importance to justify any hostile interference on the part of Great Britain between Russia and the Porte ; the second, that this interference had been wholly unsuccessful ; and the third, that his majesty's ministers, in endeavoring to compel the empress of Russia to abandon her claim to Oczakow and its district, had been guilty of gross misconduct. These motions gave rise to a debate, which lasted, by adjournment, two days, on the latter of which Mr. Fox exerted all the force of his great talents to persuade the house to accede to the proposed censure of administration.

Mr. Pitt, after paying a just compliment to the splendid eloquence of Mr. Fox, observed, that his speech had been directed to the passions and imaginations of his hearers, rather than to their judgment ; and therefore he desired to submit to the house, a plain and simple statement of the grounds upon which he had acted respecting the Russian armament. The measure, he said, was founded upon the principle of preserving the balance of power in Europe, a principle so obviously wise and necessary, that the gentlemen on the opposite side could not but admit it in theory,

although they denied it in practice. He was fully convinced, that the interest and honor of this country required the most vigilant attention to the political situation of the continental powers, lest the predominance of any one should destroy that equipoise, which was allowed to be essential to the safety of the whole. From the time of William the third to the present period, the Ottomans had always been considered as powerful allies and formidable enemies; and it was evident, that the ruin or depression of the Turkish empire must materially affect the balance of power. This was a doctrine strenuously maintained by Montesquieu, and all the best political writers. It was well known, that the object of the Russians had long been to acquire exclusive sovereignty in the Black Sea; and were they entirely to expel the Turks from thence, by gaining possession of all its ports, and of the whole of the surrounding country, a new naval power would arise, dangerous to all Europe, and particularly to Great Britain, whose safety and prosperity depended upon the superiority of her fleets. It was surely, therefore, of importance to endeavor to check the rapid progress of the empress against the Porte, and to induce her to desist from her schemes of dismembering

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

the Turkish dominions. He acknowledged, that Oczakow was, as to its population and its commerce, of no great consequence; but as a fortress commanding the navigation of the Niester, and as a point to be gained by the empress in her system of ambition, it was of considerable value. It was an object of a certain degree of importance; it was worth some risques, but not all; and he conceived, that he had equally done his duty in first attempting to secure this object to Turkey; and in afterwards advising the relinquishment of it, when it became manifest, that it could only be obtained at too high a price. It might, however, have been secured by the means which were used, had it not been for the division and opposition excited in this kingdom, and for the other proceeding to which he had on a former occasion alluded. Mr. Fox might therefore triumph in his success, but it was a triumph over the friends and the counsels of his country.

The first motion was negatived, and the second disposed of by means of the previous question, both without a division. The third was rejected by a majority of 244 to 116.

The transaction referred to by Mr. Pitt in this and in the former debate, respecting the

negotiations at Petersburg, was never made the subject of formal inquiry, or of actual discussion in parliament; but it was of so remarkable a nature, and shews so strongly to what length Mr. Fox carried his party principles, that I shall transcribe Mr. Burke's account of it, the accuracy of which I find attested by authentic documents among Mr. Pitt's papers. It is to be presumed, that Mr. Fox would never have had recourse to such a measure, if he had not entertained a confident hope, that, having already succeeded in rendering the Russian armament unpopular, he should overset Mr. Pitt's administration, provided the empress could be prevailed upon to persevere in her demand: that point he accomplished without any difficulty, but the consequence did not prove what he expected; he defeated Mr. Pitt's plan, without gaining the main object he had himself in view; he brought a certain degree of discredit and danger upon his country, by effecting the aggrandizement of an unfriendly and powerful court, while his own personal ambition remained ungratified.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

The following is the first of Mr. Burke's "observations on the conduct of the minority," published in 1793:—"The laws and constitution of the kingdom intrust the sole

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

and exclusive right, of treating with foreign potentates, to the king. This is an undisputed part of the legal prerogative of the crown. However, notwithstanding this, Mr. Fox, without the knowledge or participation of any one person in the house of commons, with whom he was bound by every party principle, in matters of delicacy and importance, confidentially to communicate, thought proper to send Mr. Adair, as his representative, and with his cypher, to St. Petersburg, there to frustrate the objects for which the minister from the crown was authorized to treat. He succeeded in this design, and did actually frustrate the king's minister in some of the objects of his negotiation.

“ This proceeding of Mr. Fox does not, as I conceive, amount to absolute high treason, Russia, though on bad terms, not having been then declaredly at war with this kingdom. But such a proceeding is, in law, not very remote from that offence, and is undoubtedly a most unconstitutional act, and an high treasonable misdemeanor.

“ The legitimate and true mode of communication between this nation and foreign powers, is rendered uncertain, precarious, and treacherous, by being divided into two channels, one with the government, one with

the head of a party in opposition to that government; by which means the foreign powers can never be assured of the real authority or validity of any public transaction whatsoever.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792:

“ On the other hand, the advantage taken of the discontent, which at that time prevailed in parliament and in the nation, to give to an individual an influence directly against the government of his country, in a foreign court, has made a highway into England, for the intrigues of foreign courts in our affairs. This is a sore evil; an evil, from which, before this time, England was more free than any other nation. Nothing can preserve us from that evil, which connects cabinet factions abroad with popular factions here, but the keeping sacred the crown, as the only channel of communication with every other nation.

“ This proceeding of Mr. Fox has given a strong countenance and an encouraging example to the doctrines and practices of the revolution and constitutional societies, and of other mischievous societies of that description, who, without any legal authority, and even without any corporate capacity, are in the habit of proposing, and, to the best of their power, of forming leagues and alliances with France.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

“This proceeding, which ought to be reprobated on all the general principles of government, is, in a more narrow view of things, not less reprehensible. It tends to the prejudice of the whole of the duke of Portland’s late party, by discrediting the principles upon which they supported Mr. Fox in the Russian business, as if they of that party also had proceeded in their parliamentary opposition, on the same mischievous principles, which actuated Mr. Fox in sending Mr. Adair on his embassy.”

I am not aware that any attempt was ever made by Mr. Fox or his friends, to controvert these facts, or to invalidate this reasoning*.

THE great prevalence of thefts and crimes of every description, the difficulty of bringing offenders to punishment, and the flagrant abuse of justice by persons known by the name of trading justices†, in the metropolis, had long been the subject of complaint; and

* This transaction was well known in Turkey. I was assured by a friend, who travelled soon afterwards in that country, that he heard it frequently mentioned; and great surprize was expressed, that Mr. Fox had not lost his head for such conduct.

† The great increase of the metropolis, and the more than proportional increase of vice, had rendered the duty of a magistrate so irksome and oppressive, that scarcely any respectable persons would undertake the office, and act gra-

a bill was introduced this session, under the sanction of government, for the purpose of preventing these evils in future, by means of a new system of police in the capital, and its vicinity. This bill empowered his majesty to establish seven public offices, in specified situations, for the administration of justice, and to appoint three magistrates to each of them, who were to attend at certain hours every day, and to have stated salaries, without any other emolument whatever. The legal fees taken, and penalties levied, at these offices, were to be paid into the hands of a receiver, and by him into the exchequer, there to constitute a fund for the payment of the salaries of the magistrates, and defraying the expences of the offices; and if they did not amount to a sufficient sum for those purposes, the deficiency was to be supplied out of the consolidated fund. The magistrates of these offices were to be incapable of sitting in parliament, and of voting or interfering at any election for the counties of Middlesex and Surry, or for Westminster or Southwark. They were authorized to employ a limited number of constables, who should have power to apprehend suspected persons and reputed tuitously in the immediate neighbourhood of London, as in other parts of the kingdom.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

thieves, whom the magistrates might afterwards commit as rogues and vagabonds: but persons so apprehended, if they should think themselves aggrieved by the judgment of the magistrates, might appeal to the next quarter sessions, giving bail for their appearance. The proposed number of offices would, it was hoped, render it easy for a person in any part of the town, in case of loss or injury, to resort to an intelligent, upright, and disinterested magistrate, for redress; whereas at present many small offences were suffered to go unpunished, on account of the inconvenient distance of Bow-street, the only public office in the metropolis; or from a reluctance to apply to an ordinary magistrate, from whom oppression or extortion, rather than justice, was to be expected; and this impunity not only operated as an encouragement to the commission of petty offences, but by the natural progress of criminal conduct, gradually led to the greatest enormities. The bill was not to extend to the city of London, properly so called, which was still to continue under the jurisdiction of the lord mayor and aldermen; nor was it to prevent other magistrates for the counties of Middlesex and Surry from acting; but it forbade their taking any fees, or levying any penalties.

To this bill two objections were urged ; first, that the influence of the crown would be increased by the appointment of the new magistrates with salaries, who might also be made subservient to political purposes. To which it was replied, that the crown in fact appointed the present magistrates, who were paid by the very exceptionable mode of perquisites ; and that there was far greater probability, that persons selected for these offices from fitness of character, for which government would be responsible, would be respectable and independent, than men who procured their names to be inserted in the commission of the peace, merely for the sake of the fees and emoluments. If a corrupt minister wished to attempt the perversion of justice, where could he find fitter instruments, than those, whose daily practice was the abuse of justice, from mercenary motives ? Every possible guard was provided against any political interference in the magistrates, by denying them the right of voting or taking part in any election within their jurisdiction ; but should any inconvenience of that or of any other kind arise, from this patronage being vested in the crown, it might be altered hereafter ; and with the greater facility, as it was intended that the bill should be only temporary.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

The other objection was directed against the clause, which enabled constables to apprehend, and magistrates to punish, "reputed thieves." This expression was represented as too vague and indefinite, and it was stated to be unfit, to punish upon suspicion only. The clause was defended upon the ground of precedent, similar powers having been given by former acts ; and no difficulty, it was conceived, could occur in ascertaining reputed thieves, who were in general perfectly well known. Persons apprehended would, before conviction, have an opportunity of disproving the accusation, and of bringing witnesses to their character ; and if the magistrate decided improperly, there would be a right of appeal. Those who were best acquainted with the subject, were of opinion, that without this power it would be impossible effectually to check the robberies and assaults, which were then so frequent in the metropolis.

The bill passed ; but being considered as an experiment, it was to remain in force only for four years. It was, however, found so salutary, that it has since been made perpetual ; and from the first establishment of this system to the present time, there has not been a single complaint against any of the magistrates, for wilful misconduct or negligence.

IN the early part of this session a petition was presented to the house of commons, signed principally by members of the Unitarian society, praying for the repeal of the penal statutes against those who denied the doctrine of the Trinity, which, they said, had not been enforced for a considerable period. Mr. Fox, who was always ready to stand forward in favor of dissenters, undertook the cause of these petitioners ; and, in making a motion conformable to the prayer of their petition, observed, that the statutes in question had been thought necessary for former times ; but, in his judgment, they had never been necessary, and now there was not a shadow of reason for retaining them. He considered them as a disgrace to the statute book, being inconsistent with the principles of toleration, which were founded in the unalienable rights of man. He contended, that all restraint and all interference with respect to religious opinions, however opposite those opinions might be to the established religion of the country, or however dangerous they might be thought to the public tranquillity, were unjust and indefensible : the legislature had no concern with any thing but actions, and had no right to presume, what would be

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

a man's conduct from the opinions which he held. He censured the church of England as being guilty of persecution, and as inculcating the doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance in the extreme.

Mr. Burke contended, that the question before the house was not a theological question, but a question of policy and prudence : and upon those grounds no sufficient reason had been urged for the repeal of these statutes. He differed from Mr. Fox, as to his abstract doctrine of the natural rights of man ; and asserted, that religious liberty, like all other rights, must be modified and restrained for the good of society. But, said he, what were the rights of man, previous to his entering into a state of society ? Whether they were paramount, or inferior, to social rights, he neither knew nor cared. Man, he had found in society ; and that man he looked to. He knew nothing of any other man ; nor could he argue on any of his rights.

As to the unitarians, they were the enemies, the avowed enemies of the church. They had declared their determination to propagate their doctrines—they had incorporated themselves into a society for that very purpose—they had published pamphlets with that view—they had raised a large fund to be em-

ployed in that service—they had entered into a solemn compact to obtain that end—they had moreover proclaimed their approbation of the most abominable proceedings in France, and had, as it were, recommended them for imitation in England. They were also connected with the Jacobin club at Paris, whose tenets they had adopted in their fullest extent. In proof of these assertions, he read extracts from the publications of this society, and from the authentic records of what had passed at their meetings; and then he desired the house to judge, whether men with such determinations, views, and principles, were fit objects of the favor and indulgence of the British legislature.

Mr. Pitt assured the house, that if there existed any laws against general toleration, he should be ready to vote for their repeal, provided it could take place consistently with the safety of the constitution; but he desired it to be understood, that his system of toleration would always be regulated by existing circumstances, and by the character of the times to which it was applied. No practical evil had ever happened from the statutes in question, or was likely to happen; and danger might arise from their repeal. Hitherto it had been always thought wise to observe

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

extreme caution in all matters of religion, and particularly to do nothing which looked like an attack upon the established faith of the country, a policy which ought never to be departed from. He saw no propriety in the house giving encouragement to a society professing principles subversive of every established religion, and of every established government; and were these statutes to be repealed, it might be inferred that the house was indifferent to the established church, for whose protection they were originally enacted, and upon whose enemies they still operated as some restraint; it being by no means true, that laws were useless, and ought to be repealed, because no occasion had lately arisen for putting them in force. The repeal of these statutes might also be considered by the public, as the first step towards a gradual removal of all those barriers, which our ancestors had erected for the safety of our civil and ecclesiastical constitution; and as indicating a disposition in the house, to favor that prevalent spirit of innovation, which had so justly excited serious alarm. As therefore no reason had been assigned for the repeal of these statutes, grounded upon any past inconvenience actually experienced, or the hope of any future positive good, he should vote

against the motion. The motion was rejected by a majority of 142 to 63.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

IN the spring of this year an association was formed, under the denomination of "The Friends of the People," consisting of 100 persons, 28 of whom were the most active members of the house of commons in opposition to the present government, with the exception of Mr. Fox*, who did not belong to this association; and, of the whole number, there was scarcely one who had not avowed himself an admirer of the French revolution†. They immediately published a short declaration, signed by all the members; and also an address, of considerable length, to the people of Great Britain, signed only by Mr. Grey, the chairman. In the former they set forth, that their object was, to obtain a parliamentary reform, by means of a more equal represen-

* This association was certainly formed without any communication with Mr. Fox; and it was generally believed, that he really disapproved it, although he defended it in the house of commons. It was observed, that when the list first appeared, it did not contain any of his old and most intimate personal friends. Mr. Grey, Mr. Sheridan, and Lord Lauderdale, were considered the founders of this association.

† In the original list of the Friends of the People, was to be found at least one-fourth of the corresponding committee of the Revolution Society.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

tation of the people, and by a more frequent exercise of the right of electing their representatives; and in the latter, they explained their design more fully, and invited such, as agreed to their principles, to join the association.

In consequence of a resolution, entered into at a meeting of this association, Mr. Grey, on the 30th of April, gave notice to the house of commons, that, in the course of the next session, he should submit to their consideration a motion, relative to the representation of the people in that house. He observed, that the necessity of a parliamentary reform had been admitted by eminent men in both houses, and particularly by the late lord Chatham, Mr. Pitt, and Mr. Fox; but, from the influence of different interests, every attempt to accomplish this purpose had hitherto proved unsuccessful. He was convinced, that since the subject had been last discussed, a considerable change had taken place in the minds of the people, and that a reform was now very generally desired. Abuses had been permitted to creep into the constitution through neglect, or had been introduced into it by corruption; and these abuses were now become of a nature so dangerous, that they threatened the very existence of the constitution itself, and, in his

opinion, could be corrected only by a timely and temperate reform. He trusted, therefore, that between the present day, and that on which he should bring forward the proposition, gentlemen would well weigh the question; and he likewise hoped, that in the mean time the sentiments of the people would be more fully ascertained.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

Mr. Pitt rose immediately, and said, he believed it was not strictly regular to enter into any observations upon a mere notice of a motion; and, therefore, he was under the correction of the chair, whether he should articulate a syllable.

Go on! go on! was echoed and re-echoed from all the different parts of the house. He then proceeded:—"If ever there was an occasion, on which the mind of every man, who had any feeling for the present, or hope for the future, happiness of this country, should be interested, the present is the time for its exertion. The present is the time, in which the whole house should lose sight of form in the regulation of debate, and apply at once to the substance of the subject which has been mentioned. Nothing can be said, nothing can be whispered upon this subject, at this time, which does not involve questions, of the most extensive, the most serious, the most

CHAP. XIV. lasting importance to the people of this kingdom—to the very being of the state. I have
 1792. other motives, I confess, besides the general importance of the subject, to say a few words now upon it. It is a question, upon which I have thought attentively. I am unwilling to weary the house with many observations upon my own conduct, or upon what seems not exactly to correspond with what I professed in the earliest part of my public character, because I am convinced, that the question to be brought forward, will involve something more than the character, the fortune, the connexion, the liberty, or the life of any individual. It may affect the peace and tranquillity which, under the favor of Providence, this country has long enjoyed, in a superior degree, perhaps, to any part of the habitable globe. It may affect us, who, from the time of general darkness and bondage, to the present hour, have sat quietly, perceiving other powers struggling with tyranny and oppression, while we enjoyed our freedom; it may bring us into anarchy and confusion, worse, if possible, than if we had to contend with despotism itself.

“I think, that the country should know, what the opinions of public men are, upon the subject now before us, and how they feel at this moment. I confess they have a peculiar

right to know from me, my opinion relative to parliamentary reform. I could have wished, that a subject of this immense importance had been brought forward at a time, when I was personally more able to take an active part in a debate than at present*, but above all on a day, on which the house had no other matter to attend to. I wish, also, the honorable gentleman would bring it forward in some distinct proposition stated to the house, that they might, early in the next session of parliament, take the whole question into consideration; in which case, I should, perhaps, have reserved myself until the day appointed, for the consideration of the subject; but as this is a general notice, without any specific proposition, I must say, I feel no difficulty in declaring, in the most decisive terms, that I object both to the time and to the mode, in which this business is brought forward. I feel this subject so deeply, that I must speak upon it without any reserve. I will therefore confess, that, in one respect, my opinion upon this subject is changed, and I am not ashamed to own it. I retain my opinion of the propriety of a reform in parliament, if it could be obtained without mischief or danger, by a general concurrence, pointing harmlessly at

* Mr. Pitt was very unwell at this time.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

its object. But I confess, I am afraid at this moment, that if agreed to by this house, the security of all the blessings we enjoy will be shaken to the foundation. I confess I am not sanguine enough to hope, that a reform at this time can safely be attempted. My object always has been, and now is most particularly so, to give permanence to that which we actually enjoy, rather than to remove any actually subsisting grievances. I conceive that the only security for the continuance of the beautiful system of our constitution, is in the house of commons; but I am sorry to confess, that this security is imperfect, while there are persons who think, that the people are inadequately represented in the degree now asserted. It is essential to the happiness of the people, that they should be convinced, that they and the members of this house feel an identity of interests; that the nation at large, and the representatives of the people, hold a general conformity of sentiment: this is the essence of a proper representative assembly; under this legitimate authority, a people may be said to be really free; and this is a state, in which the true spirit of proper democracy may be said to subsist. This is the only mode by which freedom and due order can be well united. If attempts be

made to go beyond this, they will end in a wild state of nature, which mocks the name of liberty, and by which the human character is degraded, instead of being exalted. I once thought, and still think, upon the point of representation of the commons, that if some mode could be adopted, by which the people might have any additional security for a continuance of the blessings which they now enjoy, it would be an improvement in the constitution of this country. That is the extent of my object: farther I never wished to go; and if this could be obtained without the risque of losing what we have, I should think it wise to make the experiment. When I say this, it is not because I believe there is any existing grievance in the country, felt at this hour. On the contrary, I believe, that at this hour we enjoy as much liberty as a rational man ought to wish for; and that we are in a state of prosperity and progressive improvement, seldom equalled, never excelled, by any nation at any period in the history of the world.

“ I now come to the time and mode of bringing this subject forward. Upon these points every rational man has two things to consider. These are, the probability of success, and the risque to be run by the attempt.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

Upon the latter consideration, I own that my apprehensions are very great : I fear the evils which may follow the attempt ; and, looking at it in both views, I see nothing but discouragement. I see no chance of succeeding in the attempt, in the first place ; but, I see great danger of anarchy and confusion in the second. It is true, I have made some attempts upon this subject myself ; but at what time ? What were the circumstances in which I did so ? There was then a general apprehension, which now, thank God, is referred to rather as a matter of history, than any thing else—all fear of danger is entirely removed—but there was then a general feeling, that we were upon the verge of a public national bankruptcy, and a strong sense was entertained of practical grievances : this was at the end of the American war, succeeding a period, when the influence of the crown was declared to have increased, to be increasing, and that it ought to be diminished. Many thought, and I was of the number, that, unless there was a better connection between the parliament and the people, and an uniformity of sentiment between them, the safety of the country was endangered. Many moderate men, however, there were at that time, who admitted there were abuses, which ought to be cor-

rected ; but who, having weighed the whole state of the case, even as it stood then, were of opinion, that, although some evil was to be met with, yet that, on the whole, the good preponderated ; and, therefore, from a fear of possible consequences, they voted against my plan of reformation. If, at such a time, and under such circumstances, moderate men thought in this way, what would they think under the present circumstances ? I put it, not only to this house, but also to the country at large ; and I would ask all moderate men in it, what are their feelings on this subject at this moment ? I believe, that I can anticipate the answer.—‘ This is not a time to make hazardous experiments.’ Can we forget what lessons have been given to the world, within a few years ? Can we lament the present situation of this kingdom, when contrasted with that of others ? Can we expect that these moderate men will become converts to the new system adopted in another country ? If not, there can be no hope of success, and consequently no wisdom in the attempt.

“ But it seems that there is a great number of persons in this country, who wish for a reform in parliament, and that they are increasing daily. That their number is great, I am happy enough to doubt : what their interest

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

or their vigor will be, if called upon to exert themselves against the good sense and courage of the sober part of the community, does not occasion me much apprehension. I do not mean to allude to the sentiments of any particular members of this house, for the purpose of reflecting upon them with severity; but when they come in the shape of advertisements in newspapers, inviting the public, as it were, to repair to their standard, and to join them, they should be reprobated, and the tendency of their meetings exposed to the people in its true colors. I am willing, as long as I can, to put the best construction upon the actions of gentlemen they will admit of, and to give them credit for their intentions; but the advertisements I allude to in the newspapers, are sanctioned with the name of the honorable gentleman who has given this notice; and therefore I will say, that there ought to be great activity on the part of the real friends of the constitution, who should take pains properly to address the public mind, and to keep it in that state, which is necessary for the preservation of our present tranquillity. I have seen, with concern, that those gentlemen, of whom I speak, members of this house, are associated with others, who not only profess reform, but un-

equivocally avow revolutionary principles, and applaud and circulate publications of the most pernicious tendency. This circumstance affords suspicion, that the motion for reform is nothing more than the preliminary to the overthrow of the whole system of our present government. If they succeed, they will destroy the best constitution that was ever formed upon the habitable globe. These considerations lead me to wish the house to take great care, that no encouragement be given to any step, which may sap the very foundation of that constitution. When I see these opinions published, and know them to be connected with principles inconsistent with the form of our government—the hereditary succession to the throne—the hereditary titles of our men of rank—and leading to the total destruction of all subordination in the state, I confess I feel no inclination to promise my support to the proposed motion for a parliamentary reform. It would be to follow a madness, which has been called liberty in another country—a condition at war with true freedom and good order—a state to which despotism itself is preferable—a state in which liberty cannot exist for a day; if it appears in the morning, it must perish before sun-set.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“ I beg leave to assure the house, that I think it my duty, to the last hour of my life, to oppose, to the utmost of my power, all projects of this nature. So much do I disapprove the present attempt, that if I were called to choose, either to hazard this, or for ever abandon all hope or desire to have any reform at all, I should say, that I would have no reform whatever; and I believe, that as a member of parliament, as an Englishman, as an honest man, I discharge my duty in making that declaration at once. I wish the honorable gentleman to reflect seriously on his character, and the stake he possesses in the country; and to consider, how much may be lost by an indiscreet attempt upon this subject.

“ I have now made a sort of compendium of the objections I shall submit to the house and the public, if the motion should ever be made; and I have only to add my earnest prayer for the security and preservation of the constitution of this country—a monument of human wisdom, which has hitherto been the exclusive blessing of the English nation.”

The speech, of which the above is a very imperfect sketch, was delivered in so impressive a manner, and was so loudly applauded, that Mr. Fox, alluding to the effect it had produced, acknowledged, that he felt additional

difficulty in declaring his sentiments, on account of the speech which he had just heard ; and he was sorry that it had received so much approbation from the house. He was aware, he said, that the subject of parliamentary reform was completely unpopular within those walls ; but he believed, that the public regarded it in a very different view. Though he considered himself almost forbidden, by the speech of the right honorable gentleman, to mention what he knew it would not be agreeable to the house to hear, yet he must assert, that unless something were done to quiet the minds of the people, there would be difficulty in preserving the internal tranquillity of the kingdom, for any great length of time. In reply to Mr. Pitt's observations upon the character of several members of the association, he confessed, that some of Mr. Grey's allies were infuriated republicans : but, on the other hand, he maintained, that among Mr. Pitt's friends, there were the slaves of despotism, men, who, without attending to the sentiments of their constituents, as in the case of the Russian armament, placed an implicit confidence in the minister, not merely from the experience of his probity and talents, but because he was minister : both descriptions of persons were equally hostile to ra-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

CHAP
XIV.

1792.

tional liberty ; but, in his opinion, the former were less dangerous than the latter. He admitted, that Mr. Paine's book, entitled, "The Rights of Man," to which he supposed Mr. Pitt alluded, mocked all ideas of reform in our government, and rather went to a total change of it : it was, indeed, a libel upon the constitution. He considered the old government of France so detestable, as fully to justify the revolution. He said, that his reason for not adding his name to the list of the society was, that though he saw great and enormous grievances, he did not see the remedy ; and, had he been consulted, he should not have advised the step which had been taken : still he did not blame Mr. Grey, for the notice he had given ; nor did he consider the present period improper for the discussion. As great reforms had taken place in other countries, in France, in Poland, and in America ; and, as philosophy was spreading her light round every part of the world, he hoped that England alone would not remain without improvement, enveloped in the darkness of bigotry.

Mr. Burke said, that old as he was, and having lost the friendship of those with whom he had long acted with the most fervent and mutual sincerity, there were few subjects, which would have induced him to come down

and deliver his opinion in that house ; but the present was an occasion, on which he thought it his duty not to be silent. He admitted, that the motives of those, who were determined to bring forward the question of parliamentary reform, might be pure and patriotic ; but still he must contend, that the notice which had been given, was founded upon an erroneous system, and fraught with the most mischievous consequences. No particular grievance had been stated, nor any specific remedy pointed out. Such a mode of proceeding was telling the people, that they were unhappy ; that they ought to be discontented and to complain, although they were not sensible, that there was any just ground of complaint ; it was a species of political quackery ; an endeavor to create the persuasion of a disease, in order to administer a favorite panacea. No petition had been presented by the people, stating any grievance, and praying for a reform of parliament as its remedy—was it then good and constitutional doctrine, to hold out to them, that the house of commons was itself a grievance, that there was in its formation something intrinsically corrupt ? He asserted, that neither in 1782, nor at present, did the people call for a parliamentary reform ; and would those who were

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

about to agitate the question in that house, pledge their characters and their consequence in the country, that if they should raise a strong spirit of reform and innovation, they would be able to guide the public opinion, and prevent all excesses? It was to be learnt from history, it should be recollected, that the beginners of any reformation seldom saw its termination, which was a strong reason against countenancing any indefinite reform, to the extent and consequence of which it was impossible to fix any boundary or limit. It was true, as had been stated, that many improvements had taken place from time to time; but these were uniformly found to be rather in defence of the real constitution than innovations. It was likewise true, that we had, at different times, cut off certain branches of the prerogative, when they were felt to be inimical to the welfare of the people; but we had always kept the lamp of the constitution burning, and only supplied it occasionally with necessary assistance, without ever attempting to alter its former nature. We had seen a reformation, a revolution, an abdication of the throne, and a change in the line of succession—but never, till lately, had there been any attempt to re-model the representation of the people. In aiming at that object, several mem-

bers of that house had joined themselves with some of the worst men in the kingdom ; and how could it be expected, that such men would be satisfied with a moderate and temperate reform ? He observed, that Mr. Fox had very justly termed Paine's book, a libel upon the constitution ; and, therefore, those clubs and societies, which recommended that book to be read by the people, were enemies to the constitution. He declared his fixed admiration of that constitution, which gave us freedom without losing order, and, by increasing order, increased our liberty ; and which, he hoped and trusted, would continue unshaken and secure against every attack. Theories ought to be founded upon experience ; and instead of adapting our constitution to a theory, theories should grow out of the constitution. He concluded, by calling upon the house to consider, whether they knew of any existing grievance, which would warrant the risque, that must unavoidably attend the proposed motion for a parliamentary reform ?

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

Although the speaker had reminded the house, that there was no question before them, the importance of the subject superseded all regard to form, and the debate was continued to a late hour. Several members of great weight and respectability, who had constantly

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

opposed Mr. Pitt, and acted with Mr. Grey, expressed their strong disapprobation of the intended motion; and earnestly deprecated the discussion, under the present circumstances of the country. As a proof of the general impression made upon the house, by the speeches of Mr. Pitt and others on the same side, it may be remarked, that five * of the twenty-eight members availed themselves of the first opportunity to withdraw their names from the society.

It was almost universally believed, that this association, professedly formed for the purpose of bringing forward the question of parliamentary reform, was really designed to embarrass and discredit Mr. Pitt. His political adversaries thought, that he would feel no small difficulty with respect to the part he should take; and in either case, they hoped, that he would suffer in the public estimation. If he should support the motion originating from such a quarter, he would be considered as countenancing those societies, and favoring those opinions, which he had been studious to represent as highly dangerous; and if he should resist it, he would lay himself open to the imputation of acting in direct opposition

* Lord John Russell, (the present duke of Bedford) Mr. Baker, Mr. Curwen, Mr. Dudley North, and Mr. Courtenay.

to his former sentiments and conduct. The manly and decided terms, however, in which he at once declared himself adverse to the measure, shewed, that he had no hesitation as to the line which it was his duty to pursue; and the difference between the present situation of the country, and that under which he had himself proposed a reform in parliament, was so material and so striking, that all endeavor to fix upon him the charge of inconsistency totally failed. It was obvious, that a proposition, which was to affect an important branch of the government, might at one time be safe and expedient, and at another hazardous and mischievous. It was indeed true, that in 1784 Mr. Pitt promised, “at all times, and in all situations, to promote a temperate and moderate reform, temperately and moderately pursued;” but this was a description, to which the reform, now in contemplation, was known by no means to answer. This attempt, therefore, to injure, like many others of a similar nature, served only to raise the character of Mr. Pitt, by affording an additional proof, that his public conduct was invariably regulated by the soundest judgment according to existing circumstances, and by an exclusive regard to the welfare of his country, and the preservation of its invaluable

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

constitution. His acute and discerning mind, under the steady guidance of these principles, enabled him to repel every attack, open or insidious, and to rise out of every difficulty, whether designedly caused by his opponents, or proceeding from events in which they had no concern, with increased reputation.

THE industry with which writings of a seditious and mischievous tendency were at this time circulated throughout the kingdom, was mentioned in the debate upon the notice given by Mr. Grey, as having chiefly produced that unquiet state of the public mind, which rendered the proposed motion so highly objectionable. Pamphlets, handbills, advertisements, paragraphs, essays, in short all the various arts of the press, under every form and in every shape, were employed to spread disaffection and discontent, and to loosen the bonds of civil society. All kings were represented as tyrants, their ministers as venal and corrupt, and their subjects as slaves; the rich were described as universally the oppressors of the poor; and as a plain inference from these doctrines, the lower ranks were called upon to shake off the yoke, under which they had hitherto groaned, and to assert their natural and unalienable rights, of which they had been so

unjustly deprived. Nor were these merely sudden and detached effusions, springing from the zeal of unconnected individuals; they were planned and combined upon system; and to keep them more surely directed to one point, a new institution was formed early in this year, under the denomination of The London Corresponding Society, whose peculiar business it was, with the assistance of agents and subordinate societies in the country, to supply such publications as might be best suited to the different descriptions of persons in their respective neighborhoods. Much expectation was built upon the communications to be made and received through this channel, as it was well known, that the universal domination of the Jacobin club at Paris over the whole extent of France, was obtained and fixed by a similar institution of a corresponding committee.

Nor were the other societies idle. About this time, the revolution society published, with great exultation, and claiming the merit of having been the first to avow their admiration of the French revolution, a work, containing a collection of their proceedings and correspondence, both at home and abroad, from the autumn of 1789 to March 1792*.

* This collection did not contain the whole of the correspondence and proceedings of the society; and it was acknow-

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

Although many of the papers had been before printed separately, yet, when seen in one view, and joined with others of a similar character, they made a very serious and deep impression. It appeared from this volume, that so early as November 1789, this society unanimously resolved, that it became the people of England, to establish societies throughout the kingdom upon revolution principles, which should maintain a correspondence with each other, and form a grand concentrated union of the true friends of public liberty. The committee, who suggested this resolution, congratulated the society as men, Britons, and citizens of the world, upon the noble spirit of civil and religious liberty, which had, since the last meeting, so conspicuously shone forth on the continent, more especially upon the happy success of the French revolution; and expressed ardent wishes, that the influence of so glorious an example might be felt by all mankind, until tyranny and despotism should

ledged, that great care and considerable time were employed to select what was least unfit to meet the public eye and answer their purpose. The most obnoxious of their papers were withheld; but even with this precaution the book was so universally reprobated by all sober-minded persons, that it was soon suppressed. Some valuable extracts from it, and a general account of its contents are, however, preserved in Rivington's Annual Register for 1792.

be swept from the face of the globe, and universal liberty and happiness prevail. On the same day, and with the same unanimity, an address of congratulation was voted to the national assembly, in which they noticed, with particular satisfaction, the encouragement, afforded by France, to other nations, to assert the indefeasible rights of mankind, and to introduce a general reformation in the different governments of Europe. In the middle of the following year, they triumphed in the farther progress of the French revolution; and affirmed, that the zeal and unanimity, with which “this sacred cause” had been supported, “seemed like an inspiration from Heaven.” They declared, that they considered the correspondence they had maintained with the patriots of France, as highly honorable to themselves and to the British character, and as calculated to produce the happiest effects, by animating the sons of freedom to assert their rights among all the nations of the earth. From the proceedings of the anniversary in 1790, it appeared, that this society had then lately received “the warmest marks of approbation and respect” from the Jacobin societies established in more than twenty of the principal cities and towns in France, together with copies, for their instruction, of numerous

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

sedition and revolutionary publications; and that in England, they had been very successful in forming societies in different parts of the kingdom. At the anniversary of 1791, which was attended by nearly 300 "friends to freedom," a long list of societies in France and England was read, with which the committee had corresponded in the course of the preceding year; and in the letters from the French societies, the members of the revolution society were hailed as friends to the revolution of nations, and to the rights of the legitimate sovereigns, the people. In a letter written to France, early in 1792, a hope was expressed, that the period was approaching, when the people in all countries would renounce with abhorrence those prejudices, which had so long contributed to rivet the fetters of slavery; especially that most fatal of all prejudices, the opinion, that a *few* capricious individuals have a right to dispose of the lives and properties of millions of their fellow-men; and in another letter of nearly the same date, they say, "We triumph in the animating prospect of that happy state of mankind, which your glorious revolution opens to us; and we look forward with transport to that period, when these inestimable blessings, which you have so nobly acquired, shall be

diffused throughout the world." An arbitrary and oppressive power in the king, a servile peerage, a rapacious and intolerant clergy, and a corrupt representation, were the specific grievances proposed to be corrected in England, by following the example of "the late glorious and splendid actions in France;" or, in other words, they considered every part of the civil and ecclesiastical establishments in this country, as requiring reform; and the sort of reform to be applied, was that which had been adopted in France, where the king had been reduced to a cypher, without even personal liberty; the titles of the peers had been abolished, their mansions levelled to the ground, their estates plundered, and their families driven into exile, or murdered with inhuman exultation; the possessions of the church had been confiscated, and the clergy deprived of their benefices; commerce, manufactures, and agriculture, had been destroyed; the Jacobin clubs had acquired a complete ascendancy over the national assembly; even the forms of administering justice had ceased; crimes of every description were committed with impunity; and no man's person or property was secure.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

Such were the principles, which the revolution and similar societies in London, circulated

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

with incredible industry, by means of affiliated societies in the country, political clubs, and cheap publications, professedly inculcating the doctrine of combining practice with principle. And that nothing might be wanted to poison the minds of the people, and to rouse them to action, numerous emissaries from France were dispersed in most of the populous towns and districts, who, from the experience they had acquired at home, were enabled to afford very important assistance to their friends in this kingdom. Every artifice, which could be applied to the passions, the prejudices, and supposed interests of the common people, which could mislead their understandings, or corrupt their hearts, having been thus practised more than two years, with increasing boldness and activity, a manifest and most pernicious change had taken place in the sentiments, dispositions, and conduct of a considerable proportion of the lower ranks of the community.

Mr. Pitt and his colleagues were convinced of the necessity of endeavoring to check the progress of this alarming evil; and accordingly, on the 21st of May, a royal proclamation was issued, in which it was stated, that divers wicked and seditious writings had been industriously dispersed, tending to excite tumult and disorder, by raising groundless jea-

lousies and discontents with respect to the laws and constitution of this realm; and that correspondences had been entered into with persons in foreign parts, with a view to forward these criminal purposes: his majesty, therefore, being resolved, as far as might be in his power, to put a stop to these dangerous practices, warned his subjects to guard against all such attempts, and to discourage all such proceedings, which aimed at the subversion of all regular government, and were inconsistent with the peace and order of society; and he strictly charged all magistrates to make diligent inquiry for discovering the authors and distributors of seditious writings, and to take the most effectual care to suppress and prevent all riots and disturbances: and he farther commanded them to transmit to the secretary of state, immediate and full information concerning all persons who might be found offending in these respects; it being his determination to carry into vigorous execution, the laws made for the preservation of public tranquillity.

CHAP
XIV.
1792.

As soon as Mr. Pitt had decided that this proclamation should be issued, he communicated the substance of it to those members of opposition in both houses, who, he had reason to think, participated in the apprehensions of government, relative to the present situation

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

of the country; and at the same time, an intimation was conveyed to them, that it would be very agreeable to Mr. Pitt, if any of them would move an address to the king upon the subject in parliament. They signified their approbation of the measure, and promised to support it; but declined moving the address.

A copy of the proclamation was presented to both houses of parliament; and, on the day appointed for taking it into consideration in the house of commons, the master of the rolls (sir Richard Arden) proposed an address to the king, expressing the warm and grateful sense of the house, for this fresh proof of his majesty's constant solicitude for the welfare and happiness of his people, and of indignation at the attempts made to weaken, in the minds of his subjects, the sentiments of obedience to the laws, and attachment to the constitution, naturally springing from the actual enjoyment of the advantages of legal and well-regulated freedom, under the government of his majesty and his illustrious ancestors: these unexampled blessings afforded peculiar motives to the inhabitants of this kingdom to beware of delusive theories, inconsistent with the relations and duties of all civil society; and rendered it the duty of every good citizen to discourage and counteract every

attempt, direct and indirect, against public order and tranquillity. Impressed with these sentiments, and confident that the nation at large must feel with them, that real liberty can only exist under the protection of law, and the authority of efficient and regular government, they pledged themselves to support his majesty in the determination he had adopted; and were persuaded, that every exertion necessary to preserve and strengthen the established constitution, would be seconded by the zeal and gratitude of a free and loyal people.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

After Mr. Powys had seconded, and another member had spoken in favor of, the address, Mr. Grey, rising for an opposite purpose, declared that he considered the proclamation as insidiously designed to make a separation between those, who had for many years acted together, and among whom there was known to exist a difference of opinion respecting the present state of the country. The firm union of this party, of which he was himself a member, he represented as essential to the maintenance of the constitution in purity and perfection. After a violent personal attack upon Mr. Pitt, charging him with inconsistency, apostacy, and delusion, (of which the house shewed evident marks of disapprobation,) he

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

proceeded to state his objections to the address. He said, that if there had been any publications of an evil and dangerous tendency, the proposed mode of noticing them was irregular and inefficient; and that his majesty's ministers ought to have prosecuted the authors and publishers of them, the moment they appeared. Presuming that Mr. Thomas Paine's "Rights of Man" were the writings particularly alluded to in the proclamation, he observed, that the first part of that work had been published more than a twelvemonth, without any proceeding against it, which, if the book deserved the character now given of it, must have been a gross and criminal neglect in administration. He represented the calling upon magistrates to make inquiry, in order to discover the authors and publishers of seditious writings, as converting that useful and respectable set of men into spies and informers. He complained, that the correspondences carried on by the subjects of this country with foreign societies, were mentioned with a view to cast a reflection upon the association of the Friends of the People, and to accuse them of an intention, by following the example of France, to make a total change in the government of this country. He affirmed, that the proclamation was entirely unnecessary, and that

it would produce the effect of exciting unfounded alarms and suspicions in the minds of the people, and of provoking rather than preventing disturbances; as might be concluded from the riots at Birmingham, which were caused by the friends of government, and in which the supposed enemies of the constitution were the only sufferers: in truth, the danger, if any, did not arise from the prevalence of a republican spirit in the country, but from that indisposition and aversion to all reform, which characterized the present times. Upon these grounds, Mr. Grey moved an amendment, conveying a censure upon ministers for not prosecuting the authors of the seditious writings alluded to in the proclamation, and which had been published a considerable time.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

Mr. Fox was scarcely less violent against Mr. Pitt, than Mr. Grey had been; and reprobated both the proclamation and address, upon nearly the same grounds.

Mr. Pitt very slightly noticed the personal attacks upon himself; only remarking, that no invective should ever deter him from pursuing that line of conduct, which he deemed most conducive to the public tranquillity, and to the preservation of constitutional freedom. In defence of the measure, under the conside-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

ration of the house, he said, that great danger was to be apprehended from the seditious writings then in circulation, and from the pernicious doctrines which had been for sometime continually gaining ground; and that it was the duty of government to frustrate the designs of those large bodies of men, who not only avowed levelling principles, but called for foreign aid to enable them to attain their end; that his majesty's ministers had taken notice of these proceedings, as soon as it appeared that they were producing an effect sufficient to justify their interference, without unnecessarily infringing the liberty of the press, or violating the constitutional rights of the subjects of this free country. He denied, that the proclamation was designed to promote divisions among his political adversaries. It was, indeed, fully evident, that the members of opposition differed on some points of primary importance; but this want of unanimity redounded highly to their honor. A conviction of the propriety and utility of the proclamation, of its absolute necessity to the maintenance of public order, and to the tranquillity of the state, could be the only motive, which had induced several gentlemen, on the opposite side of the house, to abandon their old friends upon the present occasion—a fair and

honorable conduct, affording an irrefragable proof, that, whatever might be their party feelings and prepossessions, they were ready to give up private attachments, and to forget former animosities, when public security and the preservation of the constitution were at stake. Nor was the proclamation, he said, intended to bring discredit upon the society of the Friends of the People: it was directed against those societies only, whose principles and proceedings were hostile to the established form of government. Without, however, attributing any improper motives to the members of the new association, he contended, that advantage would be taken of such a society, and of the purpose for which it was instituted, by persons whose designs were really mischievous; and more especially, as parliamentary reform was one of the ostensible objects of all who wished for a revolution in this country. The society, therefore, of the Friends of the People, must expect to be implicated in the charge of disaffection, if they connected themselves with the societies, to which he alluded. The first part of Paine's Rights of Man was so wild, extravagant, and absurd, that it did not appear calculated to do mischief; and a prosecution by the attorney general, would only have raised it into notice. It would, indeed,

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

probably have soon sunk into oblivion, if it had not been circulated by the unwearied exertions, and at the expence, of clubs and societies: but a prosecution was commenced against the second part of the work, the moment it was discovered that it carried the visionary notions of the author still farther, and was beginning to make an unfavorable impression upon the public mind: the forms, however, of the courts of law had not yet allowed the trial actually to take place. In reply to the charge of converting magistrates into spies, he said, that the proclamation only reminded them of that part of their duty, which they were at all times bound to perform, and in the discharge of which, present circumstances demanded extraordinary vigilance; and upon that subject, he farther remarked, that it was impossible for the ministers and legal advisers of the crown, to bring offenders to punishment, unless those, who were qualified and required by their office, gave the necessary information to the proper department of the executive government. He expressed his astonishment at the denial of the existence of a republican spirit in this kingdom, when it was openly avowed, and industriously propagated, both by individuals and societies; and asserted, that Mr. Fox, by the arguments he

had that day used, if not the advocate, was certainly the friend, of Mr. Paine and his doctrines: such conduct appeared to him irreconcilable with any spark of patriotism, or regard for the established form of government. It was scarcely to be believed, that any one should seriously maintain, that there was no ground for apprehension and alarm, nor any sufficient cause for the proclamation, when it was known, that numerous clubs, established in the manufacturing towns and districts, had adopted, and were eagerly spreading, opinions, inconsistent with public tranquillity, and which, if not checked in time, might, and would, undermine and overthrow the constitution.

Several opposition members, particularly the marquis of Titchfield, lord North, Mr. Windham, Mr. Anstruther, and Mr. T. Grenville, delivered their sentiments in favor of the address; and the last of those gentlemen said, that writings of a seditious nature had been circulated among the soldiers and sailors. They all acknowledged their conviction, that the doctrines lately propagated, and the conduct pursued, by clubs and societies, as well as by individuals, demanded the utmost attention, and most vigorous interposition of government, and called for the strenuous and combined resistance of all, who were desirous

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

of averting from this country, the evils which had been experienced in France, from similar beginnings.

Mr. Grey did not venture to divide the house, and his amendment being rejected, the address was agreed to.

The more than usual violence of Mr. Fox and Mr. Grey, and their personal attack upon Mr. Pitt, in this debate, may probably be attributed to the mortification they felt at losing the support of some of the most respectable of their adherents, upon a question, not only material in itself, but involving principles, which, in the present state of public affairs in this country, and upon the continent, could not fail to be the subject of future discussion, and of future measures. The obvious danger of an approaching schism in their party, which must necessarily weaken their own cause, and strengthen that of administration, not unnaturally produced an irritation of mind, which burst forth in the bitterest asperity of language.

The address was communicated to the house of lords, and their concurrence to it requested, that it might be presented to his majesty, as the joint address of the two houses. As soon as a motion for that purpose was made and seconded, the prince of Wales rose for the

first time, to deliver his sentiments in the house of lords :—He should, he said, be deficient in his duty as a member of parliament, unmindful of that respect he owed to the constitution, and inattentive to the peace and welfare of the country, if he did not state to the world, what was his opinion, upon a subject of such magnitude, as that on which their lordships were then deliberating. He was educated in principles, which taught him to revere the constitutional liberties of the people, on which their happiness depended ; and to those principles he was determined, as far as he could have any weight, to give his firm and constant support. The matter at issue, in fact, was, whether the constitution was or was not to be maintained ; whether the wild ideas of untried theory were to conquer the wholesome maxims of established practice ; and whether those laws, under which we had flourished for a long series of years, were to be subverted by a pretended reform, unsanctioned by the people. As a person nearly and dearly interested in the welfare, and he should emphatically add, in the happiness and comfort of the people, it would be treason to the principles of his mind, if he did not come forward and declare his disapprobation of those seditious publications which had occa-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

sioned the motion then before the house.

His interest was connected with the interest of the people; they were indeed inseparable.

On this great, on this solid basis, he grounded the vote which he meant to give; and that vote should unequivocally be, for a concurrence with the commons in their wise and salutary address.

Lord Grenville, alluding to the speech of his royal highness, in the course of the debate, observed, that such a testimony of regard to the constitution, and zeal for the welfare of the people, must warm the breast of every Englishman who heard it; and was the strongest assurance and satisfaction to the people at large, that they might long expect a continuance of that prosperity, and of those essential blessings, which they had enjoyed since the accession of the present illustrious family to the throne of England.

The declaration of these sentiments, by the heir apparent to the throne, had the greater effect, from the well-known circumstance, that the influence of his royal highness had hitherto been exerted against the administration of Mr. Pitt; and from the general opinion, that his royal highness was personally attached to several of those, who represented the proclamation as wholly unnecessary.

The address was supported by the duke of Portland, lords Spencer, Kinnoul, Stormont, Porchester, and Rawdon, all of whom were considered as opposition members.

Lord Lauderdale, a leading member of the society of the Friends of the People, moved nearly the same amendment as had been proposed by Mr. Grey in the house of commons; and it was rejected without a division: lord Lansdown was the only peer who spoke in its favour. The original motion passed.

This reception of the proclamation and address, in the two houses of parliament, was highly gratifying to the friends of public tranquillity, and of the established form of government; and both Mr. Pitt and lord Grenville paid a just tribute of praise to the conduct of those members, who, though not in the habit of agreeing to the measures of the present administration, came forward with their approbation and support on this occasion, in a manner which reflected the greatest honor upon themselves, and deserved the thanks of the country.

THE riots which took place at Birmingham, in the preceding summer, had been several times incidentally mentioned in the course of the present session; and at last Mr. Whitbread announced his intention of making a motion

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

upon the subject. Mr. Dundas deprecated a discussion, which could be productive of no good, and might give rise to fresh disturbances, or at least cause new irritation, in the town and neighborhood of Birmingham, where every thing was quiet at present. Mr. Whitbread, however, persisted; and, on the 21st of May, proposed an address to the king, the object of which was, to censure ministers for not prosecuting the magistrates, on account of their conduct during the riots. As Mr. Pitt took no part in the debate upon this motion, it will be sufficient to observe, that it appeared from the speeches of Mr. Dundas, and other members, that the riots were of a political and not of a religious nature, having been occasioned by a persevering determination to commemorate the anniversary of a political event, and Dr. Priestley having taught his religious opinions at Birmingham for eighteen years, without any molestation; that the circumstance of the mischief being confined to the houses and property of dissenters, was owing to persons of that description being the most violent in applauding the French revolution, and decrying the blessings of the British constitution; that the attorney and solicitor general, after the most mature deliberation, had been decidedly of opinion,

that the affidavits sent from Birmingham, and other documents laid before them, for the purpose of criminating the magistrates, did not afford sufficient ground for a public prosecution ; that both before and after this decision of the law officers of the crown, it was open to the dissenters as a body, or to any individual, to proceed against the magistrates by indictment or information, but that no such process had been instituted, which was a strong presumption in their favor ; that no complaint had been made to that house, by any person who considered himself aggrieved by the conduct of the magistrates, and that there was no reason for charging any of them with wilful neglect of duty, although it was scarcely to be expected, that, in so long a scene of alarm and confusion, no accidental mistake should have been committed, and no inadvertent expression used ; that the magistrates had received the public thanks of some of the most respectable inhabitants of Birmingham ; and that the conduct of his majesty's ministers, in their exertions to send troops for the purpose of quelling the riots, and afterwards to discover the rioters and bring them to punishment, was acknowledged, even by the opponents of government, to have been highly laudable and meritorious.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

These facts being established to the satisfaction of the house, and evidently exempting both the magistrates and administration from all possibility of blame, Mr. Whitbread was earnestly requested to withdraw his motion, as being imprudent, and likely to do harm; but he refused, and upon a division, the motion was rejected by a majority of more than 4 to 1.

THE repeated discussions, which had taken place in parliament, in former years, relative to the slave trade, together with the printed evidence, which had been very generally circulated, had excited great interest upon the subject throughout the kingdom; and no fewer than 508 petitions, all praying for the abolition of this infamous traffic, were presented to the house of commons in the early part of the present session. On the 2d of April, Mr. Wilberforce, in a committee of the whole house, moved the following resolution:—
 “That it is the opinion of this committee, that the trade, carried on by British subjects, for the purpose of obtaining slaves on the coast of Africa, ought to be abolished.” In the course of the debate which followed, Mr. Dundas declared himself convinced of the impolicy and iniquity of the trade, but thought

that it would be imprudent, and unjust to the various descriptions of persons interested in the cultivation and produce of the West Indian islands, to abolish it immediately; and, therefore, he proposed, that the word “gradually” should be inserted before the word “abolished,” in the motion. This amendment was supported by the Speaker, (Mr. Addington) and several members, who were fearful of the effects of so material a change being suddenly made in the valuable concerns of our colonies; but it was strongly opposed by Mr. Fox and others, who had constantly stood forward as decided advocates for the abolition. Mr. Jenkinson, after admitting the trade to be indefensible, said, that he perfectly agreed with the friends of the abolition in their end, and differed from them only in the means of accomplishing that end. He was desirous of doing, by regulation, what they wished to do by a more direct method. He was of opinion, that by a progressive improvement in the treatment of the slaves, they would become more and more prolific, so that in a short period no importation would be wanted, in which case the trade would cease of itself; and that he might formally bring before the house a plan for that purpose, he moved that the chairman should leave the chair.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

After Mr. Estwicke had said a few words in favor of the amendment moved by Mr. Dundas, Mr. Pitt rose, and began by remarking, that the debate of that night had taken a course altogether new. A difference of opinion had indeed been stated ; but upon principles far removed from those which had been maintained, when the question was discussed in former years. By far the greater number of the persons, who had spoken in the present debate, had thought it their duty to declare their full and entire concurrence with his honorable friend, in promoting the abolition of the slave trade, as their ultimate object. Being agreed upon the abolition itself, the only dispute now was, as to the period of time at which it should take place. " I therefore," continued Mr. Pitt, " congratulate this house, the country, and the world, that this great point is gained, that we may now consider this trade as having received its condemnation ; that its sentence is sealed ; that this curse of mankind is seen by the house, in its true light ; and that the greatest stigma on our national character, which ever yet existed, is about to be removed : And, sir, which is still more important, that mankind, I trust, in general, are now likely to be delivered from the greatest practical evil,

that ever has afflicted the human race, from the severest and most extensive calamity recorded in the history of the world."

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

Mr. Pitt then entered at great length into the effect which the abolition would produce upon the real interest of proprietors of estates in the West Indies, the condition of the negroes, and the tranquillity and safety of the islands; and shewed, that all the arguments drawn from those sources, pleaded much more loudly and strongly for an immediate, than for a gradual, abolition. He also contended, that an act of parliament, operating directly and instantly, would secure the object they all had in view, more effectually, and with less difficulty, than internal regulations in the respective islands, or any other plan which could be devised. "Let us then," said he, "begin from this time; let us not commit these important concerns to any farther hazard; let us prosecute this great object from this very hour; let us vote that the abolition of the slave trade shall be immediate, and not left to I know not what future time or contingency."

Having drawn this conclusion from considering in what manner the colonies themselves would be affected by the abolition, he proceeded to another part of the subject, in

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

the following animated strain: "But now, sir, I come to Africa; that is the ground on which I rest; and there it is that I say my right honorable friends do not carry their principles to their full extent. Why ought the slave trade to be abolished? Because it is incurable injustice: surely this is a reason for immediate, rather than gradual, abolition. By allowing the trade to continue even for one hour, do not my right honorable friends weaken, do they not desert, their own argument of its injustice? If on the ground of injustice it ought to be abolished at last, why ought it not now? Why is injustice to be suffered to remain for a single hour? From what I hear without doors, I fear that the general conviction of this injustice has led some men to suppose, that the slave trade would never have been permitted to begin, but from some strong and irresistible necessity, a necessity, however, which, if it was fancied to exist at first, I have shewn cannot be thought by any man whatever to exist now. This plea of necessity, thus presumed, and presumed, as I suspect, from the circumstance of injustice itself, has caused a sort of acquiescence in the continuance of this evil. Men have been led to place it in the rank of those necessary evils, which are supposed to be the

lot of human creatures, and to be permitted to fall upon some countries or individuals, rather than upon others, by that Being, whose ways are inscrutable to us, and whose dispensations, it is conceived, we ought not to look into. The origin of evil is indeed a subject beyond the reach of human understandings; and the permission of it by the Supreme Being, is a subject into which it belongs not to us to inquire. But where the evil in question is a moral evil, which a man can scrutinize, and where that moral evil has its origin within ourselves, let us not imagine, that we can clear our consciences by this general, not to say irreligious, way of laying aside the question. If we reflect at all on this subject, we must see, that every necessary evil supposes that some other and greater evil would be incurred, were it removed: I therefore desire to ask, what can be that greater evil, which can be stated to overbalance the one in question? I know of no evil that ever has existed, nor can I imagine any evil to exist, worse than the tearing seventy or eighty thousand persons annually from their native land, by a combination of the most civilized nations, inhabiting the most enlightened quarter of the globe, but more especially under the sanction of the laws of that nation, which calls herself

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

the most free and most happy of them all. Even if these miserable beings were proved guilty of every crime, before you take them off, of which however not a single proof is adduced, ought we to take upon ourselves the office of executioners? And even if we condescend so far, still can we be justified in taking them, unless we have clear proof that they are criminals?

“ But if we go much farther, if we ourselves tempt the Africans to sell their fellow-creatures to us, we may rest assured, that they will take care to provide, by every method, by kidnapping, by village breaking, by unjust wars, by iniquitous condemnations, by rendering their country a scene of bloodshed and misery, a supply of victims increasing in proportion to our demand. Can we then hesitate in deciding, whether the wars in Africa be their wars or our’s? It was our arms in the river Cameroon put into the hands of the trader, that furnished him with the means of pushing his trade; and I have no more doubt that they are British arms, put into the hands of Africans, which promote universal war and desolation, than I can doubt their having done so in that individual instance.

“ I have shewn how great is the enormity of this evil, even on the supposition that we

buy only convicts and prisoners of war. But take the subject in the other way; take it on the grounds stated by the right honorable gentleman opposite to me, and how does it stand? Think of eighty thousand persons carried away out of their country, by we know not what means—for crimes imputed! for light or inconsiderable faults! for debt perhaps! for the crime of witchcraft! or a thousand other weak and scandalous pretexts! besides all the fraud and kidnapping, the villanies and perfidy, by which the slave-trade is supplied! Reflect on these eighty thousand persons, thus annually taken off! There is something in the horror of it, which surpasses all the bounds of imagination. Admitting that there exists in Africa something like to courts of justice; yet, what an office of humiliation and meanness is it in us to take upon ourselves to carry into execution the partial, the cruel, the iniquitous sentences of such courts, as if we also were strangers to all religion, and to the first principles of justice.

“ But that country, it is said, has been in some degree civilized, and civilized by us. It is said they have gained some knowledge of the principles of justice. What, sir, have they gained principles of justice from us? Their civilization brought about by us! Yes,

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

we give them enough of our intercourse to convey to them the means, and to initiate them in the study, of mutual destruction. We give them just enough of the forms of justice, to enable them to add the pretext of legal trials to their other modes of perpetrating the most atrocious iniquity. We give them just enough of European improvements, to enable them the more effectually to turn Africa into a ravaged wilderness. Some evidences say, that the Africans are addicted to the practice of gambling, that they even sell their wives and children, and ultimately themselves. Are these then the legitimate sources of slavery? Shall we pretend, that we can thus acquire an honest right to exact the labor of these people? Can we pretend that we have a right to carry away to distant regions, men of whom we know nothing by authentic inquiry, and of whom there is every reasonable presumption to think, that those who sell them to us, have no right to do so? But the evil does not stop here. I feel that there is not time for me to make all the remarks which the subject deserves; and I refrain from attempting to enumerate half the dreadful consequences of this system. Do you think nothing of the ruin and the miseries in which so many other individuals, still remaining in Africa, are in-

volved, in consequence of carrying off so many myriads of people? Do you think nothing of their families which are left behind? of the connexions which are broken? of the friendships, attachments, and relationships, that are burst asunder? Do you think nothing of the miseries in consequence, that are felt from generation to generation? of the privation of that happiness, which might be communicated to them by the introduction of civilization, and of mental and moral improvement? a happiness, which you withhold from them, so long as you permit the slave trade to continue. What do you yet know of the internal state of Africa? You have carried on a trade to that quarter of the globe, from this civilized and enlightened country; but such a trade, that, instead of diffusing either knowledge or wealth, it has been the check to every laudable pursuit. Instead of any fair interchange of commodities, instead of conveying to them from this highly-favored land any means of improvement, you carry with you that noxious plant, by which every thing is withered and blasted; under whose shade nothing that is useful or profitable to Africa will ever flourish or take root. Long as that continent has been known to navigators, the extreme line and boundaries of its coasts are all with which

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

Europe is yet become acquainted; while other countries in the same parallels of latitude, through a happier system of intercourse, have reaped the blessings of a mutually beneficial commerce. But as to the whole interior of that continent, you are, by your own principles of commerce, entirely shut out. Africa is known to you only in its skirts: yet even there you are able to infuse a poison, which spreads its contagious effects from one end of it to the other, which penetrates to its very centre, corrupting every part to which it reaches. You there subvert the whole order of nature; you aggravate every natural barbarity, and furnish to every man living on that continent, motives for committing, under the name and pretext of commerce, acts of perpetual violence and perfidy against his neighbor.

“ Thus, sir, has the perversion of British commerce carried misery instead of happiness to one whole quarter of the globe. False to the very principles of trade, misguided in our policy, and unmindful of our duty, what astonishing—I had almost said, what irreparable, mischief have we brought upon that continent? I would apply this thought to the present question. How shall we ever repair this mischief? How shall we hope to obtain, if it be possible,

forgiveness from Heaven, for those enormous evils we have committed, if we refuse to make use of those means, which the mercy of Providence has still reserved to us, for wiping away the guilt and shame, with which we are now covered? If we refuse even this degree of compensation, if, knowing the miseries we have caused, we refuse even now to put a stop to them, how greatly aggravated will be the guilt of Great Britain! and what a blot will these transactions for ever be in the history of this country! Shall we then delay to repair these injuries, and to begin rendering this justice to Africa? Shall we not count the days and hours, that are suffered to intervene, and to postpone the accomplishment of such a work? Reflect what an immense object is before you—what an object for a nation to have in view, and to have a prospect, under the favor of Providence, of being now permitted to attain. I think the house will agree with me, in cherishing an ardent desire to enter without delay upon the measures necessary for these great ends; and I am sure, that the immediate abolition of the slave trade is the first, the principal, the most indispensable act of policy, of duty, and of justice, which the legislature has to take; if it be indeed their wish to secure those important objects to which I have alluded, and which

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

CHAP. we are bound to pursue by the most solemn
 XIV. obligations.

1792.

“ There is, however, one argument set up as an universal answer to every thing which can be urged on our side, whether we address ourselves to gentlemen’s understandings, or to their hearts and consciences. It is necessary I should remove this formidable objection; for though not often stated in distinct terms, I fear it is one, which has a very wide influence. The slave-trade system, it is supposed, has taken such deep root in Africa, that it is absurd to think of its being eradicated; and the abolition of that share of the trade carried on by Great Britain, and especially if her example be not followed by any other power, is likely to be of very little service. Give me leave to say, in answer to so dangerous an argument, that we ought to be extremely sure indeed of the assumption on which it rests, before we venture to rely on its validity; before we decide, that an evil, which we ourselves contribute to inflict, is incurable, and on that very plea refuse to desist from bearing our part in the system which produces it. You do not know, it is said, that other nations will give up the trade, if you should renounce it. I answer, that if this trade is as criminal as it is asserted to be, nay, if it has in it a thousandth part

of the criminality, which I and others, after a thorough investigation of the subject, charge upon it, God forbid, that we should hesitate in determining to relinquish so iniquitous a traffic, even though it should be retained by other countries. God forbid, however, that we should fail to do our utmost towards inducing other countries to abandon a bloody commerce, which they have been probably led in a great measure by our example to pursue. God forbid, that we should be capable of wishing to arrogate to ourselves the glory of being singular in renouncing it.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“ I tremble at the thought of gentlemen’s indulging themselves in the argument which I am combating—an argument as pernicious as it is futile. We are friends, say they, to humanity—we are second to none of you, in our zeal for the good of Africa—but the French will not abolish—the Dutch will not abolish—we wait, therefore, on prudential principles, till they join us, or set us an example. How, sir, is this enormous evil ever to be eradicated, if every nation is thus prudentially to wait, till the concurrence of all the world shall be obtained? Let me remark too, that there is no nation in Europe, which has, on the one hand, plunged so deeply into this guilt as Britain; or which is so likely, on the other,

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

to be looked up to as an example, if she should have the manliness to be the first in decidedly renouncing it. But, sir, does not this argument apply a thousand times more strongly in a contrary way? How much more justly may other nations point to us, and say, “Why should we abolish the slave-trade, when Great Britain has not abolished it? Britain, free as she is, just and honorable as she is, and deeply also involved as she is in this commerce, above all nations, not only has not abolished, but has refused to abolish—she has investigated it fully—she has gained a complete insight into its nature and effects; she has collected volumes of evidence on every branch of the subject; her senate has deliberated again and again; and what is the result? She has gravely and solemnly determined to sanction the slave trade; she sanctions it at least for a while: her legislature therefore, it is plain, sees no guilt in it, and has thus furnished us with the strongest evidence which she can furnish—of the justice unquestionably—and of the policy also, in a certain measure, and in certain cases at least, of permitting this traffic to continue.”

“This, sir, is the argument, with which we furnish the other nations of Europe, if we again refuse to put an end to the slave-trade. Instead, therefore, of imagining, that by choosing

to presume on their continuing it, we shall have exempted ourselves from guilt, and have transferred the whole criminality to them, let us rather reflect, that on the very principle urged against us, we shall henceforth have to answer for their crimes, as well as for our own. We have strong reasons to believe, that it depends upon us, whether other countries will persist in this bloody trade, or not. Already we have suffered one year to pass away; and now that the question is renewed, a proposition is made for gradual, with the view of preventing immediate, abolition. I know the difficulty that exists in attempting to reform long-established abuses; and I know the danger arising from the argument in favor of delay, in the case of evils, which, nevertheless, are thought too enormous to be borne, when considered as perpetual. But, by proposing some other period than the present, by prescribing some condition, by waiting for some contingency, or by refusing to proceed till a thousand favorable circumstances unite together, perhaps till we gain the general concurrence of Europe—a concurrence, which, I believe, never yet took place at the commencement of any one improvement in policy or in morals—year after year escapes, and the most enormous evils go unredressed. We see this abundantly exemplified, not only

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

in public, but in private, life. Similar observations have been often applied to the case of personal reformation. If you go into the street, it is a chance but the first person who crosses you is one, "*vivendi recte qui prorogat horam.*" We may wait; we may delay to cross the stream before us, till it has run down; but we shall wait for ever, for the river will still flow on, without being exhausted*. We shall be no nearer to the object, which we profess to have in view, so long as the step, which alone can bring us to it, is not taken. Until the actual, the only, remedy is applied, we ought not to flatter ourselves, either that we have as yet thoroughly laid to heart the evil we affect to deplore, or that there is as yet any reasonable assurance of its being brought to an actual termination.

" Having now detained the house so long, all that I will farther add, shall be on that important subject, the civilization of Africa, which I have already mentioned that I consider as the leading feature in this question. Grieved am I to think, that there should be a single person in this country, much more that there should be a single member in the

* Mr. Pitt evidently alluded to those beautiful lines of Horace :

*Rusticus expectat dum defluat amnis, at ille
Labitur, et labetur in omne volubilis ævum.*

British parliament, who can look on the present dark, uncultivated, and uncivilized state of that continent, as a ground for continuing the slave-trade ; as a ground not only for refusing to attempt the improvement of Africa, but even for hindering and intercepting every ray of light, which might otherwise break in upon her ; as a ground for refusing to her the common chance and the common means, with which other nations have been blessed, of emerging from their native barbarism.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“ Here, as in every other branch of this extensive question, the argument of our adversaries pleads against themselves ; for, surely, sir, the present deplorable state of Africa, especially when we reflect that her chief calamities are to be ascribed to us, calls for our generous aid, rather than justifies any despair on our part of her recovery, and still less any farther repetition of the injuries.

“ I will not much longer fatigue the attention of the house ; but this point has impressed itself so deeply on my mind, that I must trouble the committee with a few additional observations. Are we justified, I ask, on any ground of theory, or by any one instance to be found in the history of the world, from its very beginning to this day, in forming the supposition which I am now combating? Are we

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

justified in supposing, that the particular practice, which we encourage in Africa, of men's selling each other for slaves, is any symptom of barbarism which is incurable? Are we justified in supposing, that even the practice of offering up human sacrifices, proves a total incapacity for civilization? I believe it will be found, and much more generally than is imagined, that both the trade in slaves, and the still more savage custom of offering human sacrifices, obtained in former periods, throughout many of those nations, which now, by the blessing of Providence, and by a long progression of improvements, are advanced the farthest in civilization. I believe, that if we will reflect an instant, we shall find, that this observation comes directly home to our own selves; and that on the same ground, on which we are now disposed to proscribe Africa for ever from all possibility of improvement, we ourselves might, in like manner, have been proscribed, and for ever shut out from all the blessings which we now enjoy.

“ There was a time, sir, which it may be fit occasionally to revive in the remembrance of our countrymen, when even human sacrifices are said to have been offered in this island. But, I would peculiarly observe on this day, for it is a case precisely in point, that the very

practice of the slave-trade once prevailed among us. Slaves, as we may read in Henry's History of England, were formerly an established article of our exports. Great numbers, he says, were exported, like cattle, from the British coast, and were to be seen exposed for sale in the Roman market. It does not distinctly appear, by what means they were procured; but there was unquestionably no small resemblance in this particular point, between the case of our ancestors and that of the present wretched natives of Africa; for the historian tells us, that adultery, witchcraft, and debt, were probably some of the chief sources of supplying the Roman market with British slaves; that prisoners taken in war were added to the number; and that there might be among them some unfortunate gamblers, who, after having lost all their goods, at length staked themselves, their wives, and their children. Every one of these sources of slavery has been stated, and almost precisely in the same terms, to be at this hour a source of slavery in Africa. And these circumstances, sir, with a solitary instance or two of human sacrifices, furnish the alleged proofs, that Africa labors under a natural incapacity for civilization; that it is enthusiasm and fanaticism to think, that she can ever enjoy the knowledge and

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

the morals of Europe ; that Providence never intended her to rise above a state of barbarism ; that Providence has irrevocably doomed her to be only a nursery for slaves for us free and civilized Europeans. Allow of this principle as applied to Africa, and I should be glad to know, why it might not also have been applied to antient and uncivilized Britain. Why might not some Roman senator, reasoning upon the principles of some honorable members of this house, and pointing to *British barbarians*, have predicted with equal boldness, “ *There* is a people, that will never rise to civilization—*There* is a people destined never to be free—a people without the understanding necessary for the attainment of useful arts, depressed by the hand of nature below the level of the human species, and created to form a supply of slaves for the rest of the world.” Might not this have been said, according to the principles which we now hear stated, in all respects as fairly and as truly of Britain herself, at that period of her history, as it can now be said by us, of the inhabitants of Africa? We, sir, have long since emerged from barbarism. We have almost forgotten, that we ever were barbarians. We are now raised to a situation, which exhibits a striking contrast to every circum-

stance, by which a Roman might then have characterized us, and by which we now characterize Africa. There is indeed one thing wanting to complete the contrast, and to clear us altogether from the imputation of acting even to this hour as barbarians; for we continue to this hour a barbarous traffic in slaves; we continue it even yet in spite of all our great and undeniable pretensions to civilization. We were once as obscure among the nations of the earth, as savage in our manners, as debased in our morals, as degraded in our understandings, as these unhappy Africans are at present. But in the lapse of a long series of years, by a progression slow, and for a time almost imperceptible, we have become rich in a variety of acquirements, favored above measure in the gifts of Providence, unrivalled in commerce, pre-eminent in arts, foremost in the pursuits of philosophy and science, and established in all the blessings of civil society: We are in the possession of peace, of happiness, and of liberty; we are under the guidance of a mild and beneficent religion, and we are protected by impartial laws, and the purest administration of justice. We are living under a system of government, which our own happy experience leads us to pronounce the best and wisest, which has ever

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

yet been framed ; a system, which has become the admiration of the world. From all these blessings we must have been for ever excluded, had there been any truth in those principles, which some gentlemen have not hesitated to lay down as applicable to the case of Africa. Had those principles been true, we ourselves should have languished to this hour, in that miserable state of ignorance, brutality, and degradation, in which our history proves our ancestors to have been immersed. Had other nations adopted these principles in their conduct towards us ; had other nations applied to Great Britain the reasoning, which some of the senators of this very island now apply to Africa, ages might have passed without our emerging from barbarism ; and we, who are enjoying the blessings of British civilization, of British laws, and of British freedom, might at this hour have been little superior, either in morals, in knowledge, or refinement, to the rude inhabitants of the coast of Guinea.

“ If then we feel, that this perpetual confinement in the fetters of brutal ignorance, would have been the greatest calamity which could have befallen us ; if we view with gratitude and exultation the contrast between the peculiar blessings we enjoy, and the wretched-

ness of the antient inhabitants of Britain ; if we shudder to think of the misery, which would still have overwhelmed us, had Great Britain continued to the present time to be the mart for slaves to the more civilized nations of the world, through some cruel policy of theirs, God forbid that we should any longer subject Africa to the same dreadful scourge, and preclude the light of knowledge, which has reached every other quarter of the globe, from having access to her coasts.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

“ I trust we shall no longer continue this commerce, to the destruction of every improvement on that wide continent ; and shall not consider ourselves as conferring too great a boon, in restoring its inhabitants to the rank of human beings. I trust we shall not think ourselves too liberal, if, by abolishing the slave trade, we give them the same common chance of civilization with other parts of the world, and that we shall now allow to Africa the opportunity—the hope—the prospect, of attaining to the same blessings, which we ourselves, through the favorable dispensations of Divine Providence, have been permitted to enjoy at a much more early period. If we listen to the voice of reason and duty, and pursue this night the line of conduct which they prescribe, some of us may live to see

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

a reverse of that picture, from which we now turn our eyes with shame and regret. We may live to behold the natives of Africa, engaged in the calm occupations of industry, in the pursuits of a just and legitimate commerce. We may behold the beams of science and philosophy breaking in upon their land, which, at some happy period, in still later times, may blaze with full lustre, and, joining their influence to that of pure religion, may illuminate and invigorate the most distant extremities of that immense continent. Then may we hope, that even Africa, though last of all the quarters of the globe, shall enjoy at length, in the evening of her days, those blessings which have descended plentifully upon us in a much earlier period of the world. Then also will Europe, participating in her improvement and prosperity, receive an ample recompence for the tardy kindness, if kindness it can be called, of no longer hindering that continent from extricating herself out of the darkness, which, in other more fortunate regions, has been so much more speedily dispelled,

— Nos primus equis oriens afflavit anhelis;
Illic sera rubens accendit lumina vespæ*.

“ Then, sir, may be applied to Africa, those

* Georg. lib. 1. 250.

words, originally used indeed with a different view,

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

His demum exactis,

Devenere locos lætos, et amœna vireta

Fortunatorum nemorum, sedesque beatas ;

Largior hic campos æther et lumine vestit

Purpureo*.

“ It is in this view, sir, it is as an atonement for our long and cruel injustice towards Africa, that the measure proposed by my honorable friend, most forcibly recommends itself to my mind. The great and happy change to be expected in the state of her inhabitants, is, of all the various and important benefits of the abolition, in my estimation, incomparably the most extensive and important.

“ I shall vote, sir, against the adjournment, and I shall also oppose to the utmost every proposition, which in any way may tend either to prevent, or even to postpone for an hour, the total abolition of the slave-trade; a measure, which, on all the various grounds I have stated, we are bound, by the most pressing and indispensable duty, to adopt.”

It is impossible to imagine that this truly eloquent and persuasive speech, which was received with the loudest applauses, did not carry conviction to the minds of many who heard

* Æn. lib. 6. 637.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

it; but still Mr. Pitt failed in his main object, immediate abolition. For, though Mr. Jenkinson's motion was rejected by a majority of 234 to 87, Mr. Dundas's proposal for inserting the word "gradually," was agreed to by a majority of 193 to 125. Mr. Wilberforce's motion, with this addition, was carried, by a majority of 145; the numbers being, 230, and 85.

After these divisions, the house adjourned.

Thus, however, was it decided, by a very large majority, that the slave trade ought to be gradually abolished; but Mr. Wilberforce, on the 4th of April, informed the house, that it was impossible for him to bring in any bill for a gradual abolition, or, in other words, to sanction for a time, that, which, it was his deep and firm conviction, ought not to endure one moment longer. It was, he said, for Mr. Dundas, who proposed, or for some of those who supported the gradual, instead of the immediate, abolition, to follow up a measure, which he disclaimed.

Mr. Dundas acknowledged, that he was not prepared with a bill, or with a digested system, to carry his opinion into effect; but being pressed by Mr. Wilberforce, Mr. Fox and other friends to abolition, he promised to take the subject into consideration, and to submit his ideas to the house on a future day.

Accordingly, on the 23d of the same month, he explained his sentiments as to the time and manner of abolishing the trade; and at the end of his speech, read twelve resolutions, the first of which, fixing a definite meaning to the word gradual, directed that the importation of African slaves into the British colonies, should cease on the 1st of January 1800; and the other eleven contained a variety of previous regulations, which appeared to him necessary for the final accomplishment of his plan at the proposed period.

It being understood, that, on the present occasion, it was intended only to make an order for printing these resolutions, with a view to their being debated on a future day, Mr. Pitt contented himself with expressing an opinion, that the house was not precluded, by the vote of the former night, from reconsidering the propriety of immediate abolition; and he hoped that an opportunity would be afforded of again voting upon that question: he did not despair of convincing the house, of the inconsistency and impracticability of a gradual abolition; but if he should fail in that attempt, he would consent to any proposition, which was most likely to shorten the duration of the slave-trade. Mr. Wilberforce and Mr. Fox concurred with Mr. Pitt in

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

thinking, that nothing had yet been done by the house to prevent a revisal and alteration of their former decision; and they all agreed, that the doctrines and additional information that day brought before the committee by Mr. Dundas, tended more and more to impress upon their minds, the necessity for a total and immediate abolition of the trade.

Two days afterwards, Mr. Dundas moved his first resolution; and lord Mornington proposed, that, instead of the 1st of January 1800, should be substituted the 1st of January 1793, which was, in fact, to propose an immediate abolition. This amendment, although strenuously supported by Mr. Pitt, Mr. Fox, and Mr. Wilberforce, was lost, by a majority of 158 to 109, and the house immediately adjourned.

At another interval of two days, the debate was resumed, and lord Mornington moved, that the trade should cease on the 1st of January 1795. Mr. Pitt, in supporting this amendment, lamented, that his efforts on this subject had, hitherto, not been completely successful; but he was consoled with the thought, that the house had come to a resolution, declarative of their opinion, that this trade ought not to continue; that all parties had concurred in reprobating it; that even its

advocates had been compelled to acknowledge its infamy. The question now was only the continuance of this abominable traffic, which even its friends thought so intolerable, that it ought to be crushed. Jamaica had imported one hundred and fifty thousand negroes in the course of twenty years: and this was admitted to be only one-tenth part of the trade. Was there ever, could there be, any thing beyond the enormity of this infamous traffic? The very thought of it was beyond human endurance. It was allowed, however, that the trade was infamous; but the abolition of it was resolvable to a question of expediency; and then, when the trade was argued as a commercial case, its advocates, in order to continue it, deserted even the principles of commerce; so that a traffic in the liberty, the blood, the life of human beings, was not to have even the advantage of the common rules of arithmetic, which governed all other commercial dealings.

The point now in dispute was only one year, as he understood; for the amendment proposed the year 1795 for the abolition, while only the year 1796 was contended for by some on the other side. As to those who were concerned in the trade, a year would not make much difference; but did it make no

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

difference to the unhappy slaves? It was true, that, in the course of commercial concerns in general, it was said sometimes to be beneath the magnanimity of a man of honor to insist on a scrupulous exactness in his own favor, upon a disputed item in accounts; but did it make any part of our magnanimity to be exact in our own favor, in the traffic of human blood? When a man gave up 500*l.* or 100*l.* against himself, upon a complicated reckoning, he was called generous; and when he insisted on it in his own favor, he was deemed niggardly. The common course when parties disagreed, was, what the vulgar phrase called, "to split the difference." If he could feel that he was to calculate upon the subject in this way, the side on which he should determine it, was in favor of the unhappy sufferers, not of those who oppressed them. But this one year was only to shew the planters, that parliament were willing to be liberal to them. "Sir," said Mr. Pitt, "I do not understand complimenting away the lives of so many human beings. I do not understand the principle on which a few individuals are to be complimented, and their minds set at rest, at the expence, and total sacrifice, of the interest, the security, the happiness, of a whole quarter of the world, which, from

our foul practices, has, for a vast length of time, been a scene of misery and horror. I say, because I feel, that every hour you continue this trade, you are guilty of an offence beyond your power to atone for; and by your indulgence to the planters, thousands of human beings are to be miserable for ever. Notwithstanding the bill passed for regulating the middle passage, even now the loss during the voyage is not less than ten in every hundred. Including the whole mortality of this deleterious traffic, nearly five hundred out of every thousand that are taken, still perish—are miserable victims brought to their graves; and the remaining part of this unhappy groupe are tainted both in body and mind, covered with disease and infection, infecting the very earth on which they tread, and the air in which they breathe; carrying with them the seeds of pestilence and insurrection to your islands. Every year you continue this abominable trade, you add thousands to the catalogue of misery. Am I then improperly pressing the house to consider, whether it be not better, that the trade should continue two, rather than three years? I feel its infamy so heavily, I am so clearly convinced of its impolicy, that I am ashamed I have not been able to prevail upon the

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

house to abandon it altogether at an instant—to pronounce with one voice, immediate and total abolition. There is no excuse for us, seeing this infernal traffic as we do. It is the very death of justice, to utter a syllable in support of it. Sir, I know I state this subject with warmth. I feel it is impossible for me not to do so; or if it were, I should detest myself for the exercise of moderation.

“As to the probability, that in the year 1795 the plantations will not be in a state fit to carry on business without the importation of fresh negroes, I will venture to say, that there is no ground whatever for any such apprehension. They will be in a situation in 1795 to go on without importation—they will be in that situation in 1794—they will be in that situation in 1793; for I have proved them to have been in that situation in 1788. In short, unless I have misunderstood the subject, and unless some reason much superior to any I have yet heard, be adduced, I shall think it the most singular act that ever was done by a deliberative assembly, to refuse to assent to the proposed amendment.”

Mr. Pitt spoke a second time in this debate, for the purpose of explaining and enforcing some of his arguments, which had been misunderstood; but all his exertions and all his

zeal were in vain, the amendment being rejected by 161 to 121.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

Sir Edward Knatchbull then proposed the 1st of January, 1796, which, after a short conversation, was carried by a majority of 151 to 132.

Mr. Dundas immediately declared, that as so material an alteration had been made in his plan, he must decline taking any farther step upon the subject; and the house adjourned.

Mr. Pitt, finding the business thus abandoned both by Mr. Wilberforce and Mr. Dundas, because their respective sentiments were not adopted by the house to their full extent, and being anxious, that the abolition should take place at any period rather than none, undertook, notwithstanding his other occupations, to move such additional resolutions as he thought requisite, and to bring in a bill founded upon them; and accordingly on the 2nd of May, he moved five of Mr. Dundas's resolutions with modifications and amendments. They passed without opposition or debate; and being reported, at Mr. Pitt's particular desire, that night, were upon his motion communicated to the house of lords at a conference the next day, together with copies of all the information and ac-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

counts, which had been received by the house of commons: the object of this haste was, that a bill might be introduced as soon as possible, with the joint concurrence of the two houses.

On the 8th of May, when the business came under consideration, lord Stormont, who was adverse to the abolition, contended, that, in a matter of so great moment, it would be beneath the dignity of the house of lords, to rely upon the documents received from the other house; and insisted, that they had a right, and that it was their duty, before they expressed any opinion upon these resolutions, to satisfy themselves of the truth of the facts, upon which they were founded, by calling witnesses to their own bar: he therefore made a motion for that purpose. The reasonableness of hearing evidence could not be controverted; but lord Grenville, who was a zealous friend to the abolition, and had undertaken to conduct the business in the house of lords, knowing that the examination of witnesses at the bar would create great delay, proposed, that it should take place before a select committee. This amendment, which was opposed by the lord chancellor and several other peers, who were unfriendly to the resolutions, was negatived by a ma-

majority of 63 to 36; and the original motion passed.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

The examination of witnesses at the bar accordingly commenced, but very little progress was made in it before the prorogation; the time of the house being much occupied by the trial of Mr. Hastings, and other public business; and of course the introduction of the intended bill was necessarily postponed to the next session. That this must be the case, was indeed foreseen from the moment it was determined, that the witnesses should be examined at the bar of the house of lords; and such postponement was unquestionably the object of those who supported that measure.

ON the 19th of March, Mr. Pitt introduced into the house of commons, a bill for the encouragement of the growth of timber in the New Forest. This bill was founded upon a report of the commissioners appointed to inquire into the state of the land revenue of the crown, who represented, that in consequence of inattention to the raising and to the preservation of timber, both upon crown lands and private property, there was great danger, that within a short period there would not be a sufficient supply of this important

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

article for the use of the navy; and the situation of the New Forest, affording a ready water conveyance to Portsmouth and Plymouth, was considered very convenient for guarding against this serious evil. The bill, containing suitable provisions for promoting the growth of timber, and for improving the royal revenue arising from the New Forest, by the sale of certain parts, and the enfranchisement of copyholds, passed the house of commons without much difficulty; but in the house of lords it met with very decided resistance, not only from those members who were in the habit of opposing the measures of government, but from the lord chancellor himself. His lordship, on the 5th of June, the day appointed for the second reading, complained, that a bill of so much importance and delicacy had been deferred to so late a period of the session, and objected to its principle, as favoring the alienation of the crown lands. Upon the same ground he censured the reports of the commissioners; asserting, that it was essential to the safety of the constitution, that the sovereign should have his interest blended with, and complicated in, the fate of the landed property of the country. He reflected severely upon those, who had given advice to the king upon this measure;

and went so far as to say, that his majesty had been imposed upon. These complaints and reproaches could not be misunderstood—they were directed, and known to be directed, against Mr. Pitt, who had introduced the bill, and whose peculiar duty it was to advise his majesty upon such subjects. The commitment of the bill was carried by a majority of 41 to 29; but a petition being presented against its farther progress, on a following day, from the owners of land in the forest, affirming, that the bill would operate in a manner injurious to their rights, and praying that they might be heard by counsel, and produce evidence at the bar of the house, which could not with propriety be refused, it was found impossible to proceed with it in the present session. The measure was never resumed, other means being resorted to for promoting the growth of timber.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

PARLIAMENT was prorogued on the 16th of June; and the king, in his speech, lamented the commencement of hostilities upon the continent; but assured the two houses, that it should be his principal care to maintain that harmony and good understanding which at present subsisted between himself and the belligerent powers.

THE extraordinary manner in which, as has been related, the lord chancellor opposed the loan bill, rendered it necessary for Mr. Pitt to take a step, which the common friends of those two distinguished persons had for some time seen to be inevitable. From the commencement of Mr. Pitt's administration, to the period of the king's illness, the lord chancellor had acted with the utmost zeal and cordiality as a member of the cabinet*; but during the proceedings in parliament, to which that unhappy event gave rise, a great alteration took place in his conduct; to such a degree indeed, that upon several occasions Mr. Pitt felt by no means confident, what part he would take in the debates in the house of lords. In all the discussions, however, relative to the regency, he invariably, and with apparent sincerity, supported the principles and measures of Mr. Pitt; but not entirely without suspicion, at the moment of the greatest difficulty, of a disposition to pursue an opposite line, in consequence of his being admitted to frequent interviews with

* Mr. Pitt used to say, that he always found it useful to talk over any measure, which he had in contemplation, with lord Thurlow, as he was sure to hear from him every objection, to which it was liable.

the prince of Wales. Whether the amendment, which took place in the king's health, had any influence in this respect, it is impossible to know. After his majesty's recovery, the same coolness and reserve towards Mr. Pitt continued and gradually increased, although there was no difference of opinion upon any political question, nor did there appear any other cause for dissatisfaction.

This was a matter of so great importance, that it was thought right to make the king acquainted with it; and his majesty wrote to the lord chancellor upon the subject, towards the end of November 1789, and received such an answer as led him confidently to hope, that Mr. Pitt would in future have no reason to complain of the lord chancellor. This, however, proved by no means the case; and Mr. Pitt, at length convinced, that he could not rely upon lord Thurlow's co-operation, submitted to the king, at the beginning of the following November, the expediency of advancing Mr. William Grenville, who was then secretary of state, to the peerage, for the purpose of conducting the public business in the house of lords, and of remedying those inconveniences, which had frequently arisen from the waywardness of the lord chancellor. To this proposal his majesty immediately assent-

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

ed ; but though Mr. Pitt had now the satisfaction of feeling entirely at ease, as far as the support of the measures of government was concerned in the house of lords, yet he still had the mortification of observing a continuance of the same unfriendly disposition in the lord chancellor.

One of the members of the cabinet *, who had been intimately acquainted, as well as politically connected, with the lord chancellor for many years, repeatedly remonstrated with him upon his present conduct towards Mr. Pitt, which he represented to be the subject of serious concern to all their colleagues, and earnestly pressed him, both for public and private reasons, to state openly and candidly his ground of complaint ; assuring him, that no offence or neglect had been intended, and that Mr. Pitt was ready to enter into an explanation upon any point he might wish. This friendly interposition entirely failed. No explicit answer could be obtained ; nor did the chancellor mention a single objection to Mr. Pitt's public measures, or specify one instance of inattention to himself. He persevered in taking every opportunity of marking his personal dislike of Mr. Pitt, though constantly warned of the unreasonableness and

* The marquis of Stafford.

unavoidable consequence of such behavior; and at last his spleen broke forth in a violent censure of a bill, to which he knew Mr. Pitt annexed the greatest importance*; and he actually voted against it without having given any previous notice of his intention. Mr. Pitt, who had shown more forbearance than any other man would have done under similar circumstances, had now no alternative. Neither the good of the public service, nor a regard to his own feelings and character, would allow him to submit to such an indignity; and on the following morning, he respectfully submitted to the king, the impossibility of his remaining in office with the lord chancellor, and the consequent necessity of his majesty's making his choice between them†. The king

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

* The bill for liquidating all future loans.

† Mr. Pitt, at the same time, wrote the following letter to the lord chancellor:

“ Downing Street, Wednesday, May 16, 1792.

“ My Lord,

“ I think it right to take the earliest opportunity of acquainting your lordship, that being convinced of the impossibility of his majesty's service being any longer carried on to advantage, while your lordship and myself both remain in our present situations, I have felt it my duty to submit that opinion to his majesty; humbly requesting his majesty's determination thereupon.

I have the honor to be, &c.

W. PITT.”

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

was in some degree prepared for this communication; and the lord chancellor was immediately acquainted, by his majesty's command, that he must resign the seals*. But as a change was not desirable so near the end of the session, and some time was requisite to bring business, depending in the court of chancery, to a conclusion, he did not actually give up the seals till the day of the prorogation, when they were placed in the hands of three commissioners†.

This dismissal of the lord chancellor was not followed by a single resignation or change in any political or legal department; nor was it expected to affect the vote of one member in either house of parliament—a clear proof of the opinion which was entertained of Mr. Pitt's conduct upon this occasion.

It was mentioned in the former part of this chapter, that lord Cornwallis, after his return to Bangalore, in the summer of 1791, passed the remainder of that year in preparing for a second expedition against Tippoo Saib. Very early in 1792, he moved his army to Outradoog‡;

* His opposition to the new forest bill, was subsequent to this notice.

† The three commissioners were, lord chief baron Eyre, Mr. justice Ashurst, and Mr. justice Wilson.

‡ It was from this place, and at this time, that lord Cornwallis wrote to Mr. Pitt the letter, part of which was

and being there joined by the nizam's forces and the Mahrattas, he proceeded on his march, and arrived in the neighborhood of Seringapatam, on the 5th of February. In the evening of the following day he attacked Tippoo's fortified camp with such success, that after a severe conflict, which lasted the whole of the night and part of the next day, he made himself master of the camp itself, and also of a considerable part of the island*, on which the city was situated. Tippoo took refuge in a strong fort near his capital, from whence he informed the allies, that he was desirous of treating for peace; and commissioners were appointed for that purpose by the different parties, who met for the first time on the 15th. But lord Cornwallis, who had immediately begun to construct works for assaulting the fort, knowing the faithlessness of the sultan, continued his operations even after the negotiation commenced; and the batteries being

quoted in the beginning of this chapter. In the same letter was the following passage:—"I think, notwithstanding all that has been said to the contrary, that the destruction of Tippoo's power would be very desirable; but peace, upon safe and honorable terms, is still the first and greatest object; and the most encouraging prospects shall not induce me to neglect an opportunity of obtaining it."

* This island is about four miles long, and a mile and half broad, formed by a division of the river Cavery, which flows around it in two distinct channels.

CHAP.

XIV.

1792.

opened on the 19th, Tippoo, who had hitherto shewn very little disposition to yield, found himself on the 23d reduced to so perilous a state, that he was compelled to submit to the following terms, dictated by lord Cornwallis ; first, that he should cede one half of his dominions to the allied powers ; secondly, that he should pay three crores and thirty lacks of rupees* ; thirdly, that he should, without any reserve, restore all the prisoners who had been taken by the Mysoreans, from the time of Hyder Ally ; and fourthly, that he should deliver up two of his three eldest sons as hostages for the performance of this treaty. Two of the sultan's sons, one ten and the other eight years old, were accordingly sent with great pomp to the English camp, on the 26th ; and on the 19th of March, after much dilatory and evasive conduct on the part of Tippoo, the definitive treaty was signed. The ceded country was divided among the three allied powers, in the manner best suited to their respective interests ; and the East India company was amply compensated for the expences of the war, by a large acquisition of territory, which produced a considerable revenue ; and at the same time, by its situation, afforded great protection and security to the company's former posses-

* Between three and four millions sterling.

sions, and to those of the friendly native powers, in the Carnatic, and on the coast of Malabar.

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

The moderation of lord Cornwallis was highly commended, in suffering Tippoo to retain one half of his dominions, as he had it completely in his power to deprive him of the whole; and the good faith which he kept with the nizam and the Mahrattas, left a favorable impression of British justice upon the minds of the Indian chiefs, while he ingratiated himself with his own officers and troops, by resigning to them his share of the plunder—an act of generosity, in which he was joined by general Medows. The account of these transactions did not arrive in England till the autumn of 1792.

By the death of lord Guilford on the 5th of August in this year, the wardenship of the Cinque Ports, worth about 3,000*l.* a year, became vacant; and the king immediately offered it to Mr. Pitt, in the following most gracious and pressing terms:

Windsor, August 6, 1792.

“ Having this morning received the account of the death of the earl of Guilford, I take the first opportunity of acquainting Mr. Pitt, that the wardenship of the Cinque Ports is an office, for which I will not receive any recommen-

CHAP.
XIV.

1792.

dations; having positively resolved to confer it on him, as a mark of that regard, which his eminent services have deserved from me. I am so bent on this, that I shall seriously be offended at any attempt to decline. I have intimated these my intentions to the earl of Chatham, lord Grenville, and Mr. Dundas."

His Majesty, knowing that Mr. Pitt was at Burton Pynsent, on a visit to his mother, sent the above letter to Mr. Dundas, in London, adding, " Mr. Dundas is to forward it with a few lines from himself, expressing, that I will not admit of this favor being declined. I desire that lord Chatham may also write, and that Mr. Dundas will take the first opportunity of acquainting lord Grenville with the step I have taken *"

We have seen, that Mr. Pitt declined an office of the same value, soon after he became first lord of the treasury, and at a moment, when his continuance in that situation was extremely uncertain. Having then been only

* The king had always expressed a great desire to make some provision for Mr. Pitt. In May 1790, Mr. Pitt applied by letter to the king, for the reversion of a tellership of the exchequer, in favor of lord Auckland's son, to which his majesty assented; and added, " had Mr. Pitt proposed some means of rendering it of utility to himself, it would have been pleasing to me, as I do not feel easy at not having had an opportunity of securing a provision for him, in case of my paying that tribute, to which every one is sooner or later subject."

a short time in his majesty's service, he felt that he had no claim upon the public; and the very peculiar circumstances in which he stood, instead of operating as an inducement to seize that opportunity of securing to himself a provision, determined him to dispose of the clerkship of the pells, without benefit to himself, or to any relative or friend. But he had now been prime minister nearly nine years; and conscious, that he had employed all his time and thoughts in endeavoring to promote the interests of his country; and knowing, that besides giving up a lucrative profession, he had expended the whole of his private fortune, in addition to his official income, he gratefully accepted this mark of his majesty's condescending kindness and approbation; and the propriety of the appointment was never called in question by any party or person *.

CHAP.
XIV.
1792.

* This assertion admits of one exception. A noble duke, who then held a high situation in his majesty's household, applied to Mr. Pitt for this office, which was always considered to be in the gift of the minister; and he took every opportunity of expressing and shewing his resentment, that Mr. Pitt would not decline it in his favor. Three years afterwards, he refused to give his vote for a professorship at Cambridge, which vote he had in right of his official situation, according to Mr. Pitt's wishes, assigning his disappointment with respect to the Cinque Ports as his reason; and yet the noble duke was suffered to retain his situation in the household till his death in 1799.

CHAPTER THE FIFTEENTH :

1792.

Affairs in France—Relative Conduct of Great Britain and France—Revolutionary Spirit in England—Meeting of Parliament—Declaration of War by France against Great Britain and Holland—Review of Mr. Pitt's Measures.

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

THE disposition of the authors and promoters of the revolution in France, to foster and encourage the same spirit in other nations, which appeared in its earliest stage, and in every part of its progress, has been cursorily noticed; and it will now be proper to enter more fully into the subject, as the consequences it produced, necessarily and materially influenced the whole course of Mr. Pitt's administration from this period.

The national assembly, immediately after the removal of the king from Versailles to Paris in 1789, received a congratulatory address from the revolution society in London, with the warmest approbation; and declared, that it contained those sentiments of universal benevolence, which ought to unite together, in all countries of the world, the true friends of

liberty and of the happiness of mankind. In the following year, a similar reception was given to a petition presented by Anacharsis Cloots, attended by a train of persons, who pretended to be ambassadors from all the nations of the earth: in this petition it was stated, that the people were everywhere under the yoke of dictators, calling themselves sovereigns, in defiance of the national assembly, who had pronounced, that the sovereignty resided in the people themselves; and the president in his answer said, that the petitioners had proved that the progress, which one nation makes in philosophy and in the rights of man, belongs equally to all other nations; and that France flattered herself, that her example would lead to the restoration of liberty in every country, by whatever name its government was administered. Upon one occasion it was boasted, that the universe would be indebted to the national assembly, for beholding the yoke of error, despotism, superstition, and ignorance, broken by all men, who, tired, like the French, of the debasement and inertness, into which the people had fallen, should annihilate every species of tyranny: and upon another it was said, that the national assembly, having had the honor of making France free, it belonged to the rising generation to carry that

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

conquest to the very extremities of the two worlds ; and the only mode of obtaining freedom for any country was pronounced to be, by raising the governed against the governors ; and by teaching the people, that such resistance was easy, and could not fail to be attended with advantage. These and other sentiments, in the same spirit of hostility to all established governments, were delivered and applauded in the national assembly, before it was even pretended, that any foreign court had expressed the slightest dissatisfaction upon the subject of the French revolution ; and to give greater effect to what passed in public, the Jacobin clubs in France, the leading members of which had the principal influence in the assembly, maintained a constant communication with similar institutions in other countries, and employed emissaries, in violation of the law of nations, to propagate their principles and excite discontent among the middle and lower classes of society. To this it may be added, that the refusal to exempt the possessions of the German princes in Alsace and Lorrain, from the operation of the decrees for the abolition of feudal rights, was in direct contradiction to the solemn compact, by which those countries were annexed to the crown of France ; and the seizure of Avignon and the

Contat Venaissin, which had formed part of the pope's dominions for several centuries*, CHAP.
XV.
1792. was another instance of the flagrant violation of the most sacred treaties, and of an utter disregard to the fundamental principles of national faith.

It was impossible that these proceedings, which threatened to disturb the tranquillity, and endanger the safety, of every independent state, should not awaken general apprehension and alarm; and it was natural to expect, that the powers, whose territories were contiguous to France, should feel themselves peculiarly interested in checking this disorganizing and revolutionary system. Soon after the flight and subsequent detention of the king of France in a state of captivity, the emperor of Germany pointed out to other courts the degraded condition, to which his brother-in-law and ally was reduced, as an example of most pernicious tendency; and suggested the necessity of requiring, in their joint names, the liberation of his most christian majesty, and of announcing their determination to unite in avenging, in the most signal manner, any farther attempt against the liberty, the honor, or safety of his royal person. The emperor

* Avignon had belonged to the Roman See four centuries and a half, and the Contat Venaissin nearly six centuries.

CHAP.

X V

1792.

and king of Prussia held a conference at Pilnitz*, to consider the expediency and means of forming a confederacy for that purpose; and a manifesto, signed by them at that place on the 27th of August 1791, was the first public notice taken of the French revolution, by any foreign power. In this manifesto they declared, that they considered the then situation of the king of France as an object of common interest to all the sovereigns of Europe; and that they hoped for the concurrence of other powers, whose assistance they had already solicited, in making the necessary exertions to enable the king of France, when placed in a state of perfect freedom, to establish a monarchical government, upon principles equally consistent with the rights of sovereigns and the welfare of the French nation.

It is to be observed, that it formed no part of this plan to restore the king of France to that absolute dominion, which he enjoyed before the revolution—its only object was, to put an end to that dangerous usurpation of authority then existing in France, by contributing to the establishment of a limited monarchy, which would have been no less beneficial to that

* The elector of Saxony, the comte d'Artois, the marquis de Bouillé, and M. de Calonne, were present at this conference.

country, than to the surrounding nations, whose peace had been frequently disturbed by the uncontrolled ambition of the French sovereigns. The powers alluded to as having been invited to join in the proposed alliance were Spain, Russia, England, Naples, and Sardinia; and they all, with the exception of England, promised to co-operate with the emperor of Germany and the king of Prussia against the ruling party in France.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

But before any active step could be taken by this coalition, if any such were really intended *, the king of France formally notified his acceptance of the new constitution to all the courts of Europe; in consequence of which, the emperor, considering this as the voluntary act of Louis, immediately declared, that the confederacy was at an end for the present; and only recommended to the other sovereigns to be upon their guard, and to hold themselves in readiness, in case any fresh events should render the renewal of the alliance adviseable. He wrote a letter soon after to the king of France, to assure him that he had no design to interfere

* "There is reason to believe, that it was not the emperor's design to commence hostilities against France, but merely to alarm the Jacobins by a junction of several powers, and to deter them from offering violence to the persons of his brother-in-law, and his own sister." Marsh v. 1. p. 10.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

in the affairs of his kingdom, while the constitution, which had been duly proposed and acceded to, was faithfully observed. He made a considerable reduction in his army, and again received the French ambassador, who had been forbidden to appear at his court. He also required the elector of Mentz to disperse the corps of French emigrants stationed in his dominions; and prohibited their assembling in military array in the Austrian Netherlands. It was scarcely possible for the emperor to give more unequivocal proof of his wish and intention to remain at peace with France; and had the king been permitted freely to exercise even the little power which the constitution gave him, no war would have ensued. The pacific disposition of his imperial majesty was indeed acknowledged by Brissot, who, both on the 29th of September and the 20th of October 1791, assured the national assembly, that there was no reason to apprehend war on the part of Austria, as the emperor was a lover of peace. This confession was the more remarkable, as on the former of those days, Brissot recommended war as a national benefit to France.

The second national assembly, generally known by the name of the Legislative Assembly, met in October 1791; and by far the

greater number of its members were Jacobins of the lowest origin*, and most unprincipled character, determined to abolish royalty with all its appendages†. While a large majority agreed upon this main point, there was a difference of opinion among them, whether their common object would be best attained by a foreign war, or by a continuance of peace; and after a struggle, which was maintained with eagerness for a considerable time, the advocates for war prevailed‡. The ultimate end, however, at which they aimed, and the means by which it was to be accomplished, were both of them measures of too great im-

* The members of the dissolved national assembly were by the constitution, incapable of being re-elected. Not 50 out of 750 members of the new assembly were supposed to possess a clear annual income of 100*l.* sterling.

† On the 4th of September in the following year, all the members of the assembly who were present, exclaimed at once, that they swore hatred to kings and to royalty.

‡ Brissot, who was at the head of the war faction, in a pamphlet addressed to the republicans of France, said, "without war France would not have become a republic;" and, "it was the abolition of royalty which I had in view in causing war to be declared!" And Louvet, in his address to Robespierre, said, "republicans who were worthy of the name, demanded the war: they dared to aspire to the lasting renown, to the immortal honor, of abolishing royalty itself, of abolishing it for ever, first in France, and then throughout the world." Marsh v. 1. p. 69. The speeches and writings of the principal members of the national assembly abounded with expressions and sentiments in favor of war.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

portance to be carried into execution abruptly. Plausible pretexts were to be sought, and the public mind was to be prepared, for these violent and unjustifiable acts.

With that view, reports were industriously circulated, that the emigrant princes were assembling an army for the purpose of invading France and effecting a counter-revolution; and that they kept up a constant correspondence with what was called an Austrian committee in the Thuilleries, under the sanction of the king*. It was also asserted, that the emperor, notwithstanding his pacific professions, was actually marching large bodies of troops towards Alsace and Lorraine; and that he was secretly urging the other powers of Europe to join in a general confederacy, for the restoration of absolute monarchy in France. These plots, it was pretended, could only be defeated by "assuming a bold attitude, and by striking the first blow." "A hundred thousand Frenchmen," the instigators to war exclaimed, "brave and well armed, are impatiently waiting for the signal to attack; while on the side of our enemies, nothing is to be perceived but extreme impotence: the

* One of the journalists was tried for asserting, that such a committee existed, and could produce no proof of his assertion.

empire is only a phantom ; Brabant will probably become free, and the ally of France ; Holland, restored to liberty, cannot be the enemy of a free people ; the distresses of Spain will render her inactive ; and the *English government* can only strike at a distance, while *the people of England* will offer up prayers for the success, which they know will one day be their own : war will fix the French revolution upon an immovable basis, and shake the throne of every despot in Europe.” It was now*, for the first time, affirmed, that the Rhine, the Alps, the Pyrenees, and the ocean, were the boundaries pointed out by nature for the kingdom of France ; an extent of country evidently comprehending several territories then possessed by other powers, to which France had not the slightest claim, and which could not be obtained but by military conquest. It was expressly asserted, that war was necessary for France—for her honor—for her safety—for the re-establishment of her finances, and of her public credit. To shew the probability of success in any attempt against their German neighbors, an official report was made to the national assembly, as early as the 12th of January 1792, stating, that 240 battalions of foot, and 160 squadrons of horse, were already

* December 14, 1791.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

assembled on the borders from Dunkirk to Besançon, with artillery and magazines for an army of 200,000 men, and that the most active measures were taking for a still farther augmentation *.

These confident representations of hostile intentions against the new constitution of France, and these projects of ambition, with the power of carrying them into execution artfully displayed, produced the desired effect; and the national assembly, finding its authority sufficiently established, and the people favorably disposed to its plans, declared war, with only seven dissentient voices, on the 20th of April 1792, against the king of Hungary and Bohemia, there being at this time no emperor of Germany†. This was also, in fact, a declaration of war against the king of Prussia, who had formally announced to the French cabinet, that he should consider any attack upon the dominions of Austria, as an attack upon his own.

Such was the commencement of the French revolutionary war, which, from the principles

* These measures were so successful, that in the summer of 1792, the French had 300,000 men in arms.

† Leopold died on the 1st of March, and his son Francis the Second, who immediately succeeded to his hereditary dominions, was not elected emperor till the 5th of July. He was crowned at Frankfort on the 14th.

in which it originated, from the number of powers afterwards engaged in the contest, from the wonderful events attending almost every stage of its long continuance, and from the extraordinary circumstances with which it was concluded, at the end of three-and-twenty years, must always occupy a most distinguished place in the page of history ; and can never cease to be highly interesting to every reflecting mind, to the latest period of time.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

The decisive step of declaring war against Austria being taken, the republican party persevered in their efforts for the utter annihilation of regal power in France. The press overflowed with productions abusive of royalty ; the private characters of the reigning family were grossly calumniated ; fresh contrivances were constantly resorted to for the purpose of lowering the king in the public estimation ; no artifice was omitted which could excite jealousy and suspicion against him ; the sincerity of his acceptance of the constitution was questioned ; and to keep the public mind in a state of constant agitation, continual rumors were spread of his intention to quit the kingdom, and throw himself into the arms of the hostile powers.

The new national assembly, from their first meeting, refused to receive the king, or to

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

make communications to him, with those exterior marks of respect, which their predecessors had observed ; neither did they address him with the accustomed titles of sire and majesty. So little regard did they pay to the constitutional code, although recently and solemnly ratified, that a member was vehemently called to order, for supposing that the consent of the king was necessary to give validity to a law ; and his majesty's exercise of the veto*, expressly vested in him by the constitution, was, soon after, the subject of severe animadversion and complaint, and even excited the most indecent clamor in the assembly. In the debates, he was treated with gradually increasing insolence and contempt ; and addresses were received with applause, which at first intimated the expediency of abridging his power, and at last urged the necessity of abrogating his office. On the 3d of August, the mayor of Paris, appearing at the bar of the assembly, surrounded by depu-

* The king refused his consent to two decrees passed on the 9th and 18th of November 1791, the former of which declared, that the emigrant princes and public functionaries, who should not return to France before the 1st of January 1792, should be considered as guilty of high treason, and have all their property confiscated ; and the other deprived the ejected priests of their pensions, and in certain cases made them liable to imprisonment for two years.

tations from all the sections, demanded, in unqualified terms, the deposition of the king; and on the sixth, a petition, to the same effect, with a long list of signatures, was presented by a numerous rabble, preceded by a man, carrying a cap of liberty upon a pike, with this inscription, "The deposition of the king." The leaders of the republican party called upon the assembly to take these addresses and petitions into consideration; and the tenth of August was fixed for the purpose of determining the important question, whether kingly authority should be any longer retained in France.

On the morning of that day, an armed mob, instigated by the heads of the Jacobin club, made an attack upon the Thuilleries, and being joined by the national soldiers, overpowered the Swiss guards, most of whom were killed in the conflict, or afterwards murdered in cold blood, together with all the servants and attendants of the royal family, found in the palace*. The king and queen, with their children, and the princess Elizabeth, at the beginning of the tumult, to avoid assassina-

* Petion, in a printed speech, afterwards confessed, that this insurrection was planned by the Federates, and their secret directors. The whole number of persons on both sides, who lost their lives this day, was supposed to be between four and five thousand.

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

tion, repaired to the hall of the assembly, who were then sitting. The assembly, instead of taking measures for stopping this outrage, and apprehending the offenders, after a short interruption, returned to the discussion in which they were engaged; and it was the lot of the king, after being detained 14 hours, in a state of the utmost anxiety, to hear a decree passed, by which he was suspended from the exercise of his royal functions, till a national convention could be assembled, for the purpose of finally deciding, whether he should be restored or dethroned. In the mean time, the king and queen were ordered to be confined close prisoners in the Temple*, whither they were immediately conducted, and a provisional executive council was appointed, consisting of six members.

Thus was the new constitution of France overturned by one of its branches, which had three times† sworn to maintain it, through the prevalence of the Jacobin party, in less than a twelvemonth after it had been accepted by the king; and on its ruins was established the reign of terror and violence. All persons of respectability and consideration, supposed

* A prison so called.

† At its first meeting on the 3d of October 1791, and on the 7th and 14th of July 1792.

to be attached to the king or favorable to his cause, who could not find the means of leaving the kingdom, were seized and committed to prison. The lands of emigrants were confiscated. The ejected priests were banished. The vessels, images, and other moveables in the churches, were sent to the mint to be coined into money; and the church bells and public statutes were converted into cannon. Domiciliary visits were instituted; and under the pretence of searching for arms, private houses were plundered by municipal officers; and their owners, if suspected of being aristocrats, arrested and imprisoned, or put to death. All regard to property, liberty, and life, was equally laid aside.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

The national assembly, having learnt, that Austria and Prussia were preparing to invade France, first declared the country to be in danger, and afterwards decreed, that the citizens should enrol themselves into volunteer regiments; and a considerable number of persons being collected in the Champ de Mars for that purpose, on the 2d of September, voices were heard in the crowd, exclaiming, that they were ready to march against their foreign enemies, but that they must first purge the nation of its domestic foes. This was the signal for one of the most horrible and exten-

CHAP. sive massacres recorded in history. Armed
 XV. assassins, prepared for the atrocious deed,
 1792. rushing forward, hastened in a body to the
 different prisons in succession, all of which
 were crowded in consequence of the late ar-
 rests; and the prisoners, being brought forth,
 after a sort of mock trial of a few minutes,
 were condemned, and instantly put to death *:
 and during the confusion caused by these un-
 paralleled proceedings, which continued the
 whole of that and of the following day, without
 intermission or resistance, many private as-
 sassinations took place in various parts of the
 city. It is difficult to ascertain the precise
 number of persons who perished on those two
 days, but there is reason to believe that it
 amounted to several thousands†. The national

* The following is the description of these proceedings by Garat, who was himself at this time minister of justice. "En deux ou trois interrogatoires, en deux ou trois reponses, toute cette espèce de procedure est accomplie; l'arrêt de vie ou de mort est prononcé. Les executeurs sont là à coté des juges; des mains des uns, les condamnés passent sous la hache des autres. Là, les juges et les bourreaux, le tribunal et l'échafaud, la vie et la mort, tout est tellement rapproché que tout paroît se confondre. Tandis qu'un prisonnier est jugé, vingt autres sont executés; les cris, les hurlemens de ceux qu'on égorge, étouffent la voix de celui qui se justifie."

† Even the authors who wish to palliate the horrors and atrocities of the French revolution, acknowledge, that 1,085 persons were murdered on those two days at Paris; but this number is certainly far beneath the truth.

guards were all ready at their respective posts; and as no one ordered them to move, it is impossible not to conclude, that their commanding officers, and also the provisional government, connived, at least, at these dreadful and infamous murders—perhaps we may go farther and affirm, that neither the attack upon the palace on the 10th of August, nor the massacre of the prisoners on the 2d and 3d of September, was the sudden and tumultuary act of an ungovernable populace, but that both were the preconcerted plans of the sanguinary rulers in France, executed by hired ruffians*; especially, when we consider, that similar atrocities were perpetrated in several provincial towns†, between the 4th and 16th of September, without any opposition from the municipal authorities, or national guards, of the respective places‡; and that no serious attempt§ was made either in the capital or in the provinces, to discover and punish the au-

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

* Not more than 200 persons were supposed to be concerned in these massacres, in a city containing 600,000 inhabitants, with 30,000 men under arms.

† Particularly at Orleans, Meaux, Lyons, and Versailles.

‡ At Versailles, 30 assassins murdered all the state prisoners, in the presence of 1,500 national guards.

§ No attempt whatever was made by the national assembly. The national convention appointed a committee to inquire into the facts relative to the death of these prisoners, but no report was made or called for.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

thors of these abominable crimes. Indeed, soon after the massacres at Paris, the municipality addressed a letter to the other municipalities in France, in which they acknowledged, that they had upon this occasion been under the necessity of having recourse to the power of the people, and that the national convention had borne honorable testimony to their conduct; and therefore they called upon the departments to give their sanction to this indispensable act of justice. This letter was signed by the administrators of the committee of public safety, sitting in the house of the mayor of Paris, and countersigned by the minister of justice, who was also a member of the executive council.

In the mean time, the duke of Brunswick conducted the allied armies of Austria and Prussia* into France; and relying on the assurances of the emigrants, that their countrymen would receive him as a friend and deliverer, he directed his march towards Paris. The inhabitants, however, on the contrary, threw every difficulty and impediment in his way; and by a slow progress, in the course

* On the 6th of July the king of France informed the national assembly, that the king of Prussia was marching with 52,000 troops to join the Austrian army. The allied armies entered France on the 21st of August.

of which he took several fortified towns, he reached the borders of Champagne, where he met with a severe repulse on the 20th of September. Finding it impossible to advance any farther, on account of the force opposed to him, and the sickness which prevailed among his soldiers, and unable to obtain provisions in a country so hostilely disposed, about ten days afterwards he was under the necessity of retreating; and before the end of October, he had relinquished all the places he had taken, and his troops had entirely evacuated France.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

The result of this expedition, which the royalists boasted would easily effect a counter-revolution, afforded no small exultation to the French patriots; and in other parts their triumph was still greater. Upon the Lower Rhine, general Custine took Spire, Worms, Mentz, and Frankfort*; and Dumourier, after the decisive battle of Gemappe on the 6th of November, made himself master of Brussels and the whole of the Austrian Netherlands, except Luxembourg. War having been declared by the national assembly against Sardinia, on the 16th of September, general Montesquiou soon after invaded Savoy, and the whole country submitted to him without resistance. In the mean time a small French

* Frankfort was retaken in the beginning of December.

CHAP. XV. 1792. army, aided by the fleet in the Mediterranean under the command of admiral Truguet, took Nice, Villa Franca, and the fortress of Montalban.

The national convention met on the 20th of September 1792, and it was chiefly composed of the most violent and democratic members of the two national assemblies *. The eternal abolition of royalty was immediately voted by acclamation; and France was declared to be a republic. Not contented with the former suppression of all ranks and distinctions in society, the democratic rage was now carried to such a puerile length, that even the common titles of monsieur and madame were forbidden to be used, by a formal decree, and that of citizen was substituted in their room. One of the members was highly applauded for asserting, that the religion of Jesus Christ was unfit to be tolerated in a republic, because it was a monarchical religion; and preached subjection and obedience to God; and that all altars raised to the Almighty, ought to be overturned, none being worthy of remaining but the sacred altars of liberty, nature, and reason †. The

* Two Englishmen, Mr. Thomas Paine, and Dr. Priestley, were chosen members of the national convention.

† Dupont a distinguished member of the national convention, delivered the following speech, which was received

absolute predominance of the Jacobin faction in the convention, was now manifest and their conduct was such as might be expected

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

with almost unanimous applause, and may therefore be considered as declaratory of the general sentiments of the convention ; “ Thrones are overturned ! Sceptres broken ! Kings expire ! And yet the altars of God remain ! Tyrants, in outrage to nature, continue to burn an impious incense on those altars ! The thrones that have been reversed, have left these altars naked, unsupported, and tottering. A single breath of enlightened reason will now be sufficient to make them disappear. And if the human race is under obligations to the French nation for the first of these benefits, the fall of kings ; can it be doubted, but that the French people, now sovereign, will be wise enough, in like manner, to overthrow those altars, and those idols, to which those kings have hitherto made them subject. Nature and reason, these ought to be the gods of men. These are my gods. Admire Nature—cultivate Reason. And you, legislators, if you desire that the French people should be happy, make haste to propagate these principles and to teach them in your primary schools, instead of those fanatical principles which have hitherto been taught. The tyranny of kings was confined to make their people miserable in this life ;—but those other tyrants, the priests, extend their dominion into another, of which they have no other idea than of eternal punishment ; a doctrine which some men have hitherto had the good nature to believe. But the moment of the catastrophe is come—all these prejudices must fall at the same time—we must destroy them, or they will destroy us. For myself, I honestly avow to the convention, I am an Atheist. There is another consideration.—Paris has had great losses. It has been deprived of the commerce of luxury ; of that factitious splendor which was found at courts, and invited strangers hither. Well ! we must repair these losses. Let me then represent to you the times that are fast approaching, when

CHAP. from men, who had usurped the government
 XV. of a great and powerful nation, and who acted
 1792. under the influence of principles, which stimulate the worst passions to an uncontrolled operation, setting at defiance every restraint, human and divine.

The success of the French armies inspired the convention with the idea of universal conquest; and emboldened them to make an open avowal of their design to carry their revolutionary system into other countries. On the 19th of November they passed the famous decree, by which they declared, in the name of the French nation, "that they will grant fraternity and assistance to all those people, who wish to procure liberty; and that they charge the executive power to send orders to their generals to give assistance to such

our philosophers, whose names are celebrated throughout Europe, Petion, Sieyes, Condorcet, and others, surrounded in our Pantheon, as the Greek philosophers were at Athens, with a crowd of disciples, coming from all parts of Europe, walking like the Peripateticks, and teaching, this man the system of the universe, and developing the progress of all human knowledge; that, perfecting the social system, and shewing in our decree of the 17th of June 1789, the seeds of the insurrections of the 14th of July, and the 10th of August, and of all those insurrections, which are spreading with such rapidity throughout Europe; so that these young strangers, on their return to their respective countries, may spread the same lights, and may operate, for the happiness of mankind, similar revolutions throughout the world."

people, as have suffered, or may suffer, in the cause of liberty." This decree may justly be considered, and was indeed intended, as an invitation to the subjects of every state to revolt and rebellion, and as a promise to support any attempt to overturn the existing government; and to make it universally known, it was ordered to be translated and printed in all the European languages *. They pronounced Savoy to be for ever united to France; and the Netherlands to be for ever dismembered from the Austrian dominions, under the pretended character of independence, although occupied by French armies, and in reality designed to be annexed to France; and in the whole of their proceedings, they manifested a fixed determination to subvert the internal government, and to attack the rights and possessions, of every nation in Europe.

Their principal attention, however, was directed to the destruction of the amiable and unfortunate Louis, which they considered essential to the permanence of their own authority, but which they did not venture, even in the plenitude of their power, to attempt, without some regard to accustomed forms in

* Brissot afterwards called this decree absurd and impolitic; and acknowledged, that it justly excited uneasiness in foreign cabinets.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

criminal prosecutions. Regular charges were therefore produced against him; and he was permitted to have the assistance of counsel. A day was appointed for his trial before the convention, although it was not vested with any judicial authority, and the person of the king was declared to be inviolable by that constitution, the infringement of which was one of his alleged offences. All who knew the character of his judges, a committee of whom were also his accusers, anticipated the result. On the 19th of January 1793, he was condemned to suffer death *; and on the 23rd, the sentence was carried into execution.

It is extremely useful to trace the French revolution from its commencement to this fatal catastrophe, to mark the series of weak and ill-concerted measures, by which a degree of financial embarrassment, at first within the reach of an easy remedy, was allowed to lead to every species of individual suffering and national calamity—the imprudent concessions of the king and his ministers, in 1789, to the

* Of the members of the convention, 366 voted for death absolutely; 23 for death, but leaving it hereafter to be discussed, when the execution should take place; eight for death, and a certain delay or respite; two for death at the peace; 319 for detention; and two for detention in irons.—It will be observed, that not a single member voted for acquittal.

importunate demands of turbulent demagogues
 —the inconsiderate co-operation of well-in-
 tented men with persons, who aimed at
 the most mischievous purposes—the gradual
 destruction of all ancient institutions, con-
 nected with regal government—the extinction
 of every sentiment of loyalty towards a mild
 and beneficent monarch, in a people, for
 centuries distinguished by veneration for their
 sovereigns—the numerous instances of savage
 barbarity, in a country long admired for its
 superior elegance and refinement—the in-
 creasing violence of each successive national
 assembly, as well as of the prevailing parties
 and individuals—the utter annihilation of even
 the forms of administrative justice, and the
 consequent insecurity of life and property—
 the demolition of every part of the eccle-
 siastical establishment, and the persecution
 and exile of all the clergy, who refused, by
 a fresh oath, to apostatize from the faith they
 had sworn to maintain—the boundless and
 dangerous influence of political clubs and so-
 cieties, acting in concert with each other—
 the progressive seduction of the middle and
 lower ranks of the community, by an inunda-
 tion of books, pamphlets, and journals, cal-
 culated to mislead the understanding, inflame
 the passions, and deprave the heart, till the

CHAP.
 XV.
 1792.

CHAP. minds of men, released from all apprehension
 XV. of punishment in this world, and from all fear
 1792. of retribution in the next, were prepared for
 the commission of crimes unparalleled in the
 history of the world. The French revolution,
 thus considered, holds out an awful
 warning to governments, how they neglect,
 and to all men of fair intentions, and of weight
 in a country, how they encourage, the slightest
 tendency to resist the constituted authorities,
 or the first attempt to unsettle and
 change what has been long established, under
 the specious pretence of correcting abuses,
 bringing things back to their supposed primitive
 purity, or attaining an imaginary
 standard of perfection.

Many of the deputies of the states general,
 equally averse from anarchy and despotism,
 originally engaged in measures hostile to the
 court, not from a desire to overturn the monarchy,
 but merely to reform what was amiss
 in the existing government, and to reduce
 the power of the king within just and proper
 limits. But unfortunately, in pursuing these
 justifiable and salutary objects, they in fact
 forwarded the views of persons of far different
 principles, with whom they had imprudently
 associated themselves, and whose violent and
 mischievous conduct, when it broke out, they

were utterly unable to restrain. They saw their error too late; and were among the earliest victims to that system, which they had undesignedly contributed to establish.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

If any one had been rash enough to call upon the constituent assembly, at its first formation, to take away the life of Louis the 16th, the proposal would have been rejected with indignation and horror, and very generally reprobated throughout the kingdom; but in less than four years, all respect and reverence for the authority and person of the king having been gradually destroyed, his death was deliberately voted, and the sentence publicly carried into execution, without any commotion or disturbance. The decided republicans did not venture even to mention the establishment of their favorite form of government, at the commencement of the revolution, being aware that the idea of so violent a transition would have excited alarm and disgust, and that many preparatory measures were necessary to the accomplishment of their object; but in 1792 kingly power had by progressive steps become so unpopular and odious, that the eternal abolition of monarchy was unanimously decreed by the national convention, and welcomed as a public blessing, both in the capital and in the provinces. Nor was the smallest effort

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

made by the people of France to assist in restoring their king to his throne, when the combined armies of Austria and Prussia were marching towards Paris, avowedly for that purpose. This quick and astonishing change is to be ascribed to the powerful operation of Jacobinical principles, which had in the interval been circulated with so much industry, and which, by undermining the foundations of all religious, moral, and social obligation, have been the baneful source of greater atrocities, and of more extensive and lasting misery to the human race, than can be traced to any other single cause. It may indeed be truly said of Jacobinism, that it created a new character in man. "This monster," says a writer who had been an eye witness of its effects in France, "was unknown in the world till the present time. It took upon itself to carry on the revolution: it directed, it executed all the operations of it, all the explosions, all the outrages: it every where appointed the most active leaders, and as instruments employed the profligates of every country. Its power far surpassed that which has been attributed to the inquisition, and other fiery tribunals, by those who have spoken of them with the greatest exaggeration. Its centre was at Paris; and its rays formed by particular clubs in every town,

in every little borough, overspread the whole surface of the kingdom. The constant correspondence kept up between those clubs and that of the capital, or to use their own expression, between the affiliated popular societies and the parent society, was as secret and as speedy as that of freemasons. In a word, the Jacobin clubs had prevailed in causing themselves to be looked up to as the real national representation. Under that pretence, they censured all the authorities, in the most imperious manner; and whenever their denunciations, petitions, or addresses failed to produce an immediate effect, they gained their point by having recourse to insurrection, assassination, and fire. While Jacobinism thus subjected all France to its control, an immense number of emissaries propagated its doctrines among foreign nations, and prepared for it new conquests *.”

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

I AM next to enquire into the relative conduct of the British and French governments towards each other, while the events, which have been just related, were taking place, and into the effect which those events produced in this country; that a just idea may be formed of the origin of the war, which broke out be-

* Bertrand de Moleville.

CHAP. between Great Britain and France, soon after
 XV. the murder of the unfortunate Louis.

1792. In giving an account of the conference at Pilnitz, and of the manifesto issued by the emperor and the king of Prussia, it was noticed, that of all the courts, to which application was then made, that of London was the only one, which refused to join in the proposed confederacy. The emperor's own words to the marquis de Bouillé were, "England is determined to observe the strictest neutrality;" an incontrovertible testimony, that the ministers of this country were resolved not to interfere in the internal affairs of France; and when the king of France soon after formally notified to the different courts of Europe, his acceptance of the new constitution, the king of Great Britain immediately sent an answer in terms of studied caution and respect, without expressing any opinion upon the change which had taken place, and plainly indicating a desire to avoid every ground of offence. Upon the same principle, Mr. Pitt, in October 1791, refused to comply with a very pressing application from M. de Calonne, to assist the French emigrant princes, who were then assembled at Coblenz, with the loan of three or four hundred thousand pounds, to enable them to execute a plan, which they had in contem-

plation, of invading France, for the purpose of effecting a counter-revolution.

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

The doctrine of the universal rights of man, and of the indefeasible claim to freedom in every part of the human race, having found its way into St. Domingo, produced, as its natural fruit, a spirit of turbulence and insubordination among the negroes, which was greatly promoted by the secret instigation of the emissaries of a society at Paris, called *Amis des Noirs*; and at length, towards the end of the summer 1791, a dreadful insurrection took place, in which many hundred lives were lost. The town of Cape François was surrounded by a formidable army of these insurgents; and the inhabitants had neither a sufficient quantity of arms and ammunition to repel them, nor of provisions to support a long blockade; and to obtain a timely supply from France was impossible. In this state of distress the governor applied to the governor of Jamaica * for assistance, who immediately dispatched three frigates with arms, ammunition, and provisions, which proved the means of saving that valuable island to France. As soon as these circumstances were known in Europe, the British ambassador was directed to signify to the court of France, that the king his master

* The Earl of Effingham.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

highly approved this conduct of the governor of Jamaica. These proceedings were the more generous, and more clearly evinced the friendly disposition of the British administration, as a great part of the white inhabitants, highly incensed against the national assembly, to whose sentiments and declarations they justly ascribed the insurrection of the negroes, had formally offered to surrender the island to any English armament, which might be sent for that purpose *. But the British ministers, as I have before had occasion to observe, were influenced by principles very different from those, which directed the counsels of France at the commencement of the American war; and declined taking any advantage of the dissatisfaction which prevailed in this important colony towards the mother country.

The king, at the opening of the session in January 1792, informed parliament, that the friendly assurances, which he received from foreign powers, and the general state of affairs in Europe, seemed to promise to his subjects the continuance of the present tranquillity; and conformably to this declaration, Mr. Pitt, in the course of the session, introduced bills

* I have found among Mr. Pitt's papers, a letter from the president of the assembly to Mr. Pitt, containing the same offer.

for the repeal of taxes to the amount of 200,000*l.* a year; proposed a considerable reduction in the naval and military establishments; and acquainted the house of commons, that there was no occasion for the renewal of the Hessian subsidy, which had just expired. These measures, all of which received the sanction of parliament, most indubitably prove, that the British cabinet had no intention to take any part in the war, then breaking out upon the continent; and that Mr. Pitt entertained no suspicion, that the French themselves would disturb the repose of Great Britain. He had not the remotest idea, that France, upon the point of being invaded by the most formidable powers of the continent, convulsed also as she was by domestic dissensions, and laboring under the most pressing pecuniary embarrassments, would wish to add to the number of her enemies, by an unprovoked attack upon this country. Having himself determined, that no just ground of complaint should be offered by Great Britain, he concluded that France would find full employment for her whole military force and all her resources, in resisting Austria and Prussia; and whatever might be the issue of the contest then commencing, or of the crisis with respect to her internal government, which was

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

evidently fast approaching, it appeared to him, that a long period must ensue before she would be in a state to cause fresh annoyance to her neighbors. He farther flattered himself, that England's forbearance to take advantage of the distress and difficulties of France, would have a favorable effect upon the future government of that country, whatever form it might assume. Such were the speculations of Mr. Pitt, when he said on the 21st of February 1792, "It is not unreasonable to expect, that the peace, which we at present enjoy, should continue at least fifteen years, since at no period of the British history, whether we consider the internal situation of this kingdom, or its relation to foreign powers, has the prospect of war been farther removed than at present." Mr. Pitt's favorite objects had for some time been, and still continued to be, the diminution of the national debt, and the abolition of taxes, both of which were incompatible with foreign war; and it seems scarcely possible to conceive, that he, or any other man, would have spoken in the most glowing terms of the advantages to be expected from the continuance of peace, at a time when he himself intended to put an end to the enjoyment of those advantages, by voluntarily entering into a war; or when he

considered it in any degree probable, that France would of her own accord commence hostilities against this country. But the French revolution was destined to defeat all human expectation, to baffle all human sagacity. Who that contemplated the anarchy and confusion prevailing in France in 1792, and the variety of difficulties with which she was then struggling, would have imagined, that in a very few years, she would have the means of carrying the evils of war, in their most aggravated shape, into every part of the continent, and of overturning, or shaking the foundation of, almost every throne in Europe? Had, however, Mr. Pitt penetrated into the views and designs of the rulers of France, had he foreseen what really happened, he must have felt it his duty, instead of reducing the establishments of our army and navy, to place the country in a state of preparation to meet the enemy; and that very preparation might have been construed into an indication of meditated hostility on his part, and have weakened one of the proofs, upon which it is now pronounced, that the French were the unprovoked aggressors, and that it was impossible for Great Britain to have avoided war, without a sacrifice of her honor, and of her independence. Mr. Pitt was indeed a sincere and

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

determined lover of peace, which was essential to all the plans he had most at heart ; and he persevered in his pacific system, till he was compelled to abandon it by the most imperious necessity.

Though all the recent measures and speeches of ministers announced the probability of the continuance of peace, the declaration of war by France against Austria, on the 28th of April, caused a depression in our funds ; and it was even reported, that press warrants were issued ; but Mr. Pitt took the earliest opportunity of publicly declaring, that the British government had resolved to have no concern in the approaching contest ; and it was soon known, that there were no warlike preparations in any of our ports. This additional proof of England's remaining neuter, was acknowledged in the most explicit terms by the French minister in London, in his dispatches to his own court ; and the king of France returned thanks to the king of Great Britain, for not having become a party to "the concert formed by certain powers against France*."

On the 25th of May, the king, having received an application from the court of

* The king of France's words were, " Je vous remercie de ce qu'à l'époque du concert que quelques puissances ont formé contre la France, vous ne vous êtes lié avec elles.

Versailles, grounded upon an article in the commercial treaty, published a proclamation, strictly forbidding all his subjects to serve under any of the enemies of France. The ready and friendly manner, in which this request was attended to, and “the sentiments of humanity, of justice, and of peace, so clearly manifested,” upon this occasion, were also acknowledged in a note from the French minister in London to the foreign secretary of state.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

In consequence of the deposition of the king of France on the 10th of August, the British government, on the 17th of that month dispatched a letter of recall to earl Gower, the British ambassador at Paris. The new constitution of France vested the executive authority in the king; and of course, when Louis was deposed, lord Gower’s credentials, which were addressed to him, ceased to be valid. The same decree, which deprived the king of the exercise of his functions, ordered also the dissolution of the national assembly, the election of a national convention, and the appointment of a provisional or temporary executive council. There was therefore at this time no permanent authority in France, either legislative or executive, and no person, or set of persons, to whom an ambassador’s letters of credence could with propriety be addressed,

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

or with whom any binding or lasting treaty or contract could be made. What one party ratified to-day, another might dissolve or violate to-morrow. This was so generally felt to be the case, that all the ambassadors from the other courts of Europe were likewise recalled. How long the present anarchy might continue, whether the combined armies would succeed in restoring Louis to his throne, or what would be the form of government ultimately established, it was impossible to foresee. In this unsettled and uncertain state of things, it was thought most prudent by our ministers not only to suspend all diplomatic communication with France, but to remove from thence the person, who had lately been invested with the character of ambassador, which was now at an end, as his residence at Paris in a private capacity, might have excited jealousy and distrust, or at least might have afforded a pretence for suspicion and complaint against the British cabinet. This step was, under present circumstances, most conformable to those principles of neutrality on which the British government had uniformly acted since the commencement of the revolution; and best calculated to evince a determination not to interfere in the internal affairs of France. It was to leave the French to

their own deliberations, and silently and passively to wait the result, without shewing favor or predilection to any of the parties, which were struggling for the ascendancy. That the grounds upon which lord Gower was required to quit France might be distinctly understood, he was directed by his government to send his letter of recall, in which they were detailed, to the French minister for foreign affairs, for the purpose of its being communicated to the provisional executive council; and an answer was returned in their name, expressing satisfaction at the renewed assurance of neutrality, which the letter contained, and acknowledging, that the French nation had good reason to hope, that the British cabinet would not depart from the justice, moderation, and impartiality, which it had hitherto manifested. Their "confidence in this respect," it was said, "was founded on facts." It is evident, therefore, that the recall of lord Gower, although afterwards enumerated among the causes, which induced the convention to declare war against this country, was not considered at the time by the executive council, as any breach of neutrality; but on the other hand they expressly admitted, that he "had left a satisfactory testimony of the sentiments of his court."

In the course of the summer repeated applications were made by the courts of Vienna and Berlin to the court of London, to join in the confederacy for the restoration of Louis ; but they were all rejected without a moment's hesitation. Mr. Pitt, in a private letter dated August 31st, 1792, says, "An account is arrived from Brussels, of the surrender of Longwy to the duke of Brunswick, which, as far as it goes, is a favorable circumstance. The particulars of his plan are not yet at all known, nor is there much ground to conjecture as to his prospect of success." This letter proves, that Mr. Pitt had no confidential communication with the courts of Vienna and Berlin, relative to their proceedings against France ; and that he so studiously avoided every degree and species of interference, that he was not acquainted with their plan of the campaign.

Although the system of neutrality was thus strictly adhered to by the British cabinet, and even acknowledged by the government of France, the conduct of the national convention and of the executive council, very soon after the recall of lord Gower, so plainly indicated a hostile disposition towards this country, that it could not but excite the attention of our ministers, and weaken Mr. Pitt's hope

of the continuance of peace. It appeared from a report made by Monge, the marine minister, on the 23d of September 1792, that the French had then actually at sea 21 ships of the line, besides 30 frigates, and that 34 ships of the line and 23 frigates were ready to be commissioned upon the shortest notice. These naval armaments and preparations could have no reference to the war with Austria and Prussia, neither of which was a maritime power, nor were they rendered necessary by any British armament, as our naval establishment was lower than at any period since the peace: there was therefore no cause to which they could be attributed, but an intended rupture with England.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

On the 16th of November the executive council came to a determination to open the Scheldt, the exclusive navigation of which was secured to Holland by a variety of treaties, guaranteed by France herself, as well as by the other powers of Europe; and it was well known, that a treaty of alliance, entered into in 1788, subsisted between Great Britain and Holland, by which they agreed to assist each other, in case the territories or rights of either were attacked. The opening, therefore, of the Scheldt would not only be a gross violation of treaties, and an act of direct

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

hostility against Holland, upon a point of the utmost importance to her commercial prosperity, but it must also have been foreseen, that it would inevitably involve France in war with this country ; and consequently the determination to take this step, which was unequivocally avowed, and for which preparations were actually making, was a proof, that the French did not wish or intend to remain at peace with Great Britain.

This proof was also corroborated by other circumstances, which took place at the same period, and which will also shew the conduct of the disaffected in England, after the deposition of Louis. The abolition of royalty in France, and the success of the French arms, afforded great exultation to the democratic societies in this kingdom ; and several of them hastened to offer their congratulations to the national convention*. The London corres-

* It is remarkable, that the English was the only nation which presented addresses of congratulation to the three successive assemblies of representatives of the French people. So early as the 14th of August 1792, several Englishmen appeared at the bar of the national assembly, and congratulated the French upon the energy which they had displayed on the 10th of that month, that is, in murdering the Swiss guards, and deposing the king. On the 13th of December of the same year, Lord Grenville said, in the house of lords, that he held in his hand, no fewer than ten addresses to the national convention from subjects of Great Britain.

ponding society, and four other societies, in a joint address, voted by 5,000 persons, represented the English, as nearly reduced, by an oppressive system, and gradual encroachments, to that abject slavery, from which the French had so gloriously emerged. The French, they said, were already free, and Britons were preparing to become so. They assured the convention, that they considered the cause in which the French were engaged, as intimately connected with their own; that they were eager to behold freedom triumphant, and man everywhere restored to the enjoyment of his just rights; that they reprobated the neutrality of England, in the present struggle of liberty against despotism, as a national disgrace; it being the duty of Britons to countenance and assist, to the utmost of their power, the champions of human happiness, and to swear inviolable friendship to a people proceeding on the plan which the French had adopted. Addresses were presented from various other English societies, and from the British and Irish citizens then at Paris*, congratulating the national conven-

* This address was voted by acclamation, at a festival for celebrating the victories of the French armies; and the following toasts among others were given;—"The republic of France, founded on the rights of man—The abolition of hereditary titles in England (sir Robert Smith, and lord Edward

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

tion on the resolution of the 10th of August, on the successful exercise of the right of insurrection, and on their other triumphs of liberty ; all which events afforded so favorable an omen to nations desirous of emancipating themselves from the yoke of governments, which were the offspring of the combined frauds of priests and tyrants. They stated, that their own political principles coincided with those of the national convention ; that there now prevailed a spirit of universal inquiry into the complicated abuses of government, and the simple means of reform, in consequence of which, innumerable societies were forming in England, Scotland, and Ireland, for putting an end to tyranny and slavery ; that the example of France had rendered the science of revolution easy ; that nations, roused from their lethargy, and following France in her career of improvement, would arm themselves, and reclaim the rights of man, with an irresistible voice ; that the French were not fighting for themselves only, but for the whole human race, and that they

Fitzgerald, who were present, renounced their titles)—The patriotic societies of Great Britain and Ireland ; with those who have contributed to enlighten the people, Priestley, Fox, Sheridan, Barlow, Mackintosh, Cooper, Tooke, and Paine—The approaching national convention of Great Britain and Ireland—May revolutions never be made by halves.”

hoped the troops of liberty would not lay down their arms, while either tyrants or slaves* remained; and that addresses of felicitation might soon be expected to cross the sea, to a national convention in England, where a reform of parliament, their present object, would soon lead to the establishment of a republic, their ultimate end. The president, in his answers, assured the deputies, who presented these addresses, that the general wish for the liberty of nations expressed in them, would be realized; that principles were waging war against tyranny, which would fall under the blows of philosophy; that royalty in Europe, was either destroyed, or on the point of perishing on the ruins of feudality; that the declaration of rights, placed by the side of thrones, was a devouring fire, which would consume them; that the defenders of French liberty would, one day, be the supporters of English; that the moment could not indeed be distant, when the people of France would offer their congratulations to a national convention in England†; that

* It is always to be remembered, that in revolutionary language, tyrants mean kings, however limited their authority; and slaves mean their subjects, however mild the government under which they live.

† Several of the journals published at Paris, and particularly one under the conduct of Condorcet, asserted, that the

CHAP.
XV
1792.

nature and principles were drawing together the French and English nations ; and that the voice of friendship would soon resound through the two republics.

While the sentiments expressed in these addresses proved beyond a possibility of doubt, that there were now, numerous societies of men in this kingdom, ready to overturn its constitution ; the answers of the president, coupled with the decree of the 19th of November, and with the naval armament, as plainly proved, that any attempt of that kind would be forwarded and assisted by the present rulers in France, not merely by means of those secret arts which had been long practised, but by open force.

Though these societies, which were daily increasing, in general professed to aim at parliamentary reform only, it was soon manifest, that they had other views and designs. Their proceedings gradually became more factious and daring, under the guidance of experienced French agents, who were amply

people of England were determined to shake off hereditary succession, and to establish a convention, as the only genuine organ of representation. The same person, in an address to the Batavians, as he called the Dutch, said, " George the third sees with anxious surprise, that throne totter under him which is founded in sophistry, and which republican truths have sapped to its very foundation."

supplied with money*, for the purpose of corrupting and seducing the people. Riots and disturbances took place in many populous districts, of so serious a nature, that they could not be quelled without the aid of military force; and there appeared a general tendency among the lower ranks, to insubordination and resistance of authority. The royal proclamation, and the unanimous address of the two houses of parliament, although at first they seemed to repress the turbulent spirit against which they were directed, did not produce any lasting effect; and Mr. Pitt became convinced of the necessity of opposing a more powerful check to the progress of revolutionary principles, as well as of taking some precautionary steps, in consequence of the hostile disposition manifested by the national convention. He had, however, hoped, that these measures might have been postponed till after Christmas, with which view parliament had been prorogued to the 3d of January, and a

* Brissot said, that "the republicans never ceased to assert, that to ensure success they must have money for secret expenses, partly for the purpose of dividing the cabinets, and partly for the purpose of exciting the people against their tyrants;" and he acknowledged, that before the declaration of war, 25 millions of livres (more than a million sterling) had been sent to England from the national treasury of France.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

farther prorogation was intended; but the unexpected success of the French arms caused such a sudden and unfavorable change in the state of affairs in France, and gave such spirits and encouragement to the Jacobins in England *, that this delay would, he perceived,

* The following letter from a military officer, dated Nov. 28, 1792, stationed at Sheffield, will give some idea of the state of the manufacturing districts at that time: " You ask me about the disposition of the people here: I had an opportunity of seeing one of their rejoicing days upon the success of the French, which took place yesterday. They began the day with roasting an ox whole, which was ready by one o'clock, and devoured very soon, the number collected being nearly ten thousand. They then formed into a regular procession, with French national colours flying, and a picture at the end of a pole, elevated in the air; this picture represented Dundas and Burke stabbing Liberty, who was falling under their daggers, and Burke treading on the swinish multitude. This procession came forward to the head inn, where they halted and formed a lane for eleven cannon, which were drawn up and fired. A man then rose up into a kind of pulpit, and read a copy of verses of some length, and of the most seditious nature. Perhaps you will have them in the papers, but I remember that they would have either death or liberty, and the last line was, " Let's live like Frenchmen, or like Frenchmen die." Between each firing of the cannon, and at all those pleasing sentiments which the verses contained, there were the loudest plaudits. After this halt, they passed on, and proceeded to other parts of the town, and in the evening separated quietly. I thought a mob of such magnitude could not have been collected without committing some outrage, but I understand they had distributed hand-bills among one another, urgently desiring them not to commit any riots. This system and order, which

be attended with the most serious danger. Having indeed now reason to think, that the French executive council had resolved upon immediate war with England; and knowing from secret intelligence, that a general insurrection was meditated, at no distant period, by the republican party of this kingdom, he determined to lose no more time, and by his advice two royal proclamations were issued on the first of December, the one for embodying a part of the militia, and the other for summoning parliament to meet on the 13th of that month *.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

governed them yesterday, makes them in reality much more formidable; for, though it may be a year before they attempt any thing, yet, whenever they do, they are as resolute and determined a set of villains as I ever saw, and will gain their object, if it is to be gained. They have debating societies, regular correspondence with the other towns, and have subscribed to purchase fire-arms, and are endeavouring to corrupt the soldiers. You must imagine I have a pleasant quarter here, but I do not think I shall be employed, and, if I am, I think myself equal to them, as their plans are not yet ripe, but hereafter they will rise into a formidable consequence, unless they are opposed and crushed very soon." This letter was addressed by the writer to his brother, and by him communicated to Mr. Pitt, among whose papers I found it.

* The King is empowered by 26 Geo. 3, c. 107, to call out the militia during a prorogation, in case of invasion or insurrection; but it is provided, that whenever the militia was so called out, parliament should meet within 14 days although it should happen to stand prorogued to a

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

In the mean time, the exportation of corn to France was prohibited ; steps were taken for augmenting the army and navy ; the guard at the bank was increased ; the tower was put into a state of defence ; several regiments were assembled in the neighborhood of the metropolis ; soldiers were stationed in the suspected districts of the country ; and ministers used all the means in their power to excite the vigilance and activity of magistrates, and to afford them support within their respective jurisdictions.

Though the growing disaffection among the inferior classes of every description, and their propensity to tumult and violence, had for some time been so evident and so alarming, as to excite in the minds of all well-disposed persons, the most anxious apprehensions for the public tranquillity and the safety of the constitution, it was very justly believed, that a great majority of the nation were warmly attached to the existing form of government, and fully aware of the risque, which must ever attend political innovation. But it was obvious, that if those, who had imbibed revolutionary principles, though comparatively few

more distant time, which was the case at present ; of course a fresh proclamation for summoning parliament was necessary.

in number, were left to carry on their plans without opposition or control, the worst consequences must inevitably follow* ; their unremitting assiduity, their cordial co-operation, and their connection with France rendering them a truly formidable body. It was acknowledged, that the danger, with which the state was now threatened, arose chiefly from the seditious societies established in most of the large towns and populous districts ; and it was wisely thought, that the most effectual mode of counteracting this evil would be, by societies of an opposite character, by associations of persons, who were desirous of averting from this country, the confusion and misery which had been experienced in France. The idea originated with Mr. Reeves † ; and it was so highly approved by all to whom it was communicated, that he was induced to announce by public advertisement, a meeting at the Crown and Anchor tavern, on the 29th of November, for taking this important subject into full consideration. The meeting was most numerous and respectably attended ; and it was unanimously agreed to form an

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

* Brissot, who must be acknowledged to be good authority upon such a subject, said, that “ revolutions were made by minorities.”

† Mr. Reeves had been chief justice in Newfoundland, from whence he was lately returned.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

association, the objects of which were declared to be, to defend the laws and constitution ; to preserve liberty and property against republicans and levellers ; to assist the civil magistrate, in preventing or suppressing tumults and riots ; and to supply cheap books and pamphlets, calculated to undeceive those who had been already misled, and to inculcate the duty and expediency of industrious, quiet, and peaceable demeanor. This seasonable and judicious association roused the dormant spirit of loyalty, and infused a new energy into the public mind. Its numbers rapidly increased ; and its beneficial effects were quickly experienced throughout the metropolis. Similar institutions were gradually formed with the same success, in different parts of the kingdom ; and a change from supineness and despondency to exertion and confidence, was every where visible. The peaceable had a rallying point to resort to for protection and security ; the disaffected were intimidated and restrained ; and the hands of government were materially strengthened at a moment, when nothing but the vigorous execution of the laws could save the country from ruin. It has rarely happened, that any private individual has so essentially contributed to the preservation of public tranquility, at

a crisis of imminent danger, as the author of these loyal associations.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

Mr. Pitt has sometimes been censured for not giving open support to the association when first formed, at the Crown and Anchor ; but he considered it far better, that the measure should appear, as it really was, perfectly unconnected with government. It was, both in its origin and in its progress, the work of independent men, free from party motives and views, and influenced solely by a desire to rescue their country from impending evil. Had Mr. Pitt stood forward as its avowed friend and advocate, it would have been represented as a ministerial manœuvre, and have lost a great part of its weight and effect. He was not consulted upon the plan before it was proposed ; but as soon as he perceived the eagerness and zeal with which it was adopted, he was convinced, that it would be productive of most signal benefit, if left to its own merit and popularity. The event fully justified his expectation, and proved that upon this occasion he acted with his usual judgement.

The meeting at the Crown and Anchor tavern was followed by a meeting of merchants, bankers, traders, and other inhabitants of the City of London, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, on the 5th of December, at which it

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

was unanimously agreed, to sign a declaration, stating, that having perceived with the deepest concern, that attempts were made to inculcate opinions contrary to the dearest interests of Britons, and subversive of those principles, which had produced and preserved their most invaluable privileges, they felt it a duty, which they owed to their country, to themselves, and to their posterity, to invite all their fellow-subjects to join with them in the expression of a sincere and firm attachment to the constitution of these kingdoms, formed in remote, and improved in succeeding, ages, and under which the glorious revolution in 1688 was effected—a constitution, wisely framed for the diffusion of happiness and true liberty, and possessing the distinguished merit, that it had on former occasions been, and they trusted would in future be, found competent to correct its errors, and reform its abuses: their experience of improvements in agriculture and manufactures, of the flourishing state of navigation and commerce, and of increased population, still farther impelled them to make a declaration of their determined resolution to support, by every means in their power, the antient and most excellent constitution of Great Britain, and a government by king, lords, and commons; and to exert their best

endeavors to impress on the minds of those connected with them, a reverence for, and a due submission to, the laws of their country, which had hitherto preserved the liberty, protected the property, and increased the enjoyments of a free and prosperous people.

The immense number, and great respectability, of the persons, who signed this declaration, produced a very beneficial effect; and the example was followed in most of the large commercial towns in the kingdom.

These exertions of individuals, and the loyal spirit manifested in every quarter, added to the precautions taken by government, had great influence in preventing the insurrection intended towards the end of the year; and paved the way for the legislative measures of the ensuing session, which the situation of the country rendered indispensable.

PARLIAMENT met on the 13th of December; and the king began his speech from the throne by stating, that having judged it necessary to embody a part of the militia, he had called the parliament together within the time limited by law for that purpose.

His majesty then informed the two houses, that the seditious practices, which were in

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

a great measure checked by the proceedings of the last session, had, of late, been renewed more openly, and with greater activity; that a spirit of tumult and disorder had shown itself in acts of riot and insurrection, which required the interposition of a military force in support of the civil magistrate; that the industry employed to excite discontent, seemed to proceed from a design to attempt the destruction of the constitution, and the subversion of all order and government; and that this design was evidently pursued in connexion and concert with persons in foreign countries; that, having himself observed the strictest neutrality in the present war on the continent, and uniformly abstained from all interference in the internal affairs of France, he could not see, without the most serious uneasiness, the strong and increasing indications, which appeared there, of an intention to cause disturbances in other countries, to disregard the rights of neutral nations, and to pursue views of conquest and aggrandizement; as well as to adopt towards his allies, the states general, who had been equally studious to observe the same neutrality, measures, neither conformable to the law of nations, nor to the positive stipulations of existing treaties; and that, under these circumstances, his majesty felt it his in-

dispensable duty to have recourse to the means of prevention and self-defence entrusted to him by law, and to augment his naval and military force ; being persuaded, that such exertions were best calculated to maintain internal tranquillity, and to preserve the blessings of peace.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

His majesty next proceeded to express his concern at the necessity for extraordinary expences, which must, for a time, prevent the application of any additional sums to the reduction of the national debt, and retard the farther diminution of taxes ; but it was a great consolation to him to reflect, that the excess of the actual revenue beyond the ordinary expenditure, would afford ample resources for defraying the expences of the preparations required for present and future safety.

After acquainting parliament, that the war in India had been terminated by an advantageous and honorable peace, his majesty concluded, by recommending the immediate adoption of such measures as might be necessary, under existing circumstances, for enforcing obedience to the laws, and for repressing every attempt to disturb the peace and tranquillity of the kingdom ; and by promising his zealous and cordial co-operation in all their endeavors to preserve and transmit to

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

posterity, the inestimable blessings which they themselves experienced.

The address was moved in the house of commons by the lord mayor of London, who stated, that the information, which he had received in his official capacity, enabled him to bear testimony to the recent establishment of numerous societies in the city of London, confederated and corresponding with other societies in different parts of the kingdom, all formed under specious pretences, but really designed to propagate seditious doctrines. These societies, he said, circulated gratis a great variety of pernicious pamphlets and publications, accommodated to the meanest capacities, and manifestly tending to create discontent in the lower classes of society; and by slow, but sure, means, to alienate them from their allegiance to the king, and from their attachment to the constitution. Under these circumstances, and recollecting also the fatal consequences of insurrection and want of timely exertion some years ago in the capital*, as well as the calamities, which had at a later period overwhelmed the metropolis of a neighboring kingdom from similar causes, he had felt himself bound in duty to put his fellow citizens upon their guard; and the de-

* In 1780.

cided manner in which they seconded his feeble efforts, together with the firm and temperate measures of prevention adopted by government, had restored tranquillity to the city, and in some degree awed the societies, to which he had alluded, into a change of conduct. He trusted that his majesty's ministers would, with equally good effect, apply the same provident wisdom, which they had displayed with respect to internal commotion, to the external danger which threatened the country.

In the debate which ensued, Mr. Fox declared it to be his firm opinion and belief, that there was not one fact stated in the king's speech, which was not false, or one assertion or insinuation, which was not unfounded. While he acknowledged, that the calamities, which had befallen a neighbouring kingdom, ought to deter men from forming experimental governments, he denied that there had been any insurrection in any part of this kingdom to warrant the calling out of the militia. He admitted, however, that there had been riots in some places ; but affirmed, that those who were concerned in them, had no design to overthrow the constitution, which they could not but know was the source of so many blessings to every description of his majesty's

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

subjects. He said, that a miserable mockery had been held out, of dangers, which had no existence, but which were made the pretext for assembling parliament in an extraordinary way, in order in reality to plunge the country into a foreign war—the whole was a ministerial artifice—a direct fraud, similar to the pretended popish plot in the reign of Charles the second. He thought, that under the pretext of guarding the constitution against the assaults of republicans and levellers, there was great risque of running into the opposite evil, that of increasing the power of the crown, and of degrading the influence of the commons house of parliament. It was at such a moment as the present, that the most dangerous, because unexpected, attacks were made on the dearest rights of the people, when the minds of men were agitated by the “idiotic clamor of republican frenzy, and popular insurrection.”

He was aware, he said, that his own opinions relative to the situation of the country were unpopular, and that a general alarm did prevail; but, he asserted, that this alarm had been excited by the arts of ministers. He condemned the Crown and Anchor meeting, and other similar associations; and recommended the repeal of the test and corporation acts, the

reform of parliament, and the removal of the disabilities to which the roman catholics were subject, as the best means of quieting the alarms of the people, and putting an end to all cause of complaint. He considered the associations, which had been formed in some of the parishes of Westminster, for the purpose of obtaining registers of strangers resident in them, and preventing the reading of seditious newspapers in public houses, as inconsistent with law and the constitution, and militating against freedom of opinion, and the liberty of the press. He admitted, that societies had circulated pamphlets containing doctrines subversive of our establishments; but he contended, that the people of England were not likely to be misled by these fanciful notions; and that the measures taken by ministers to check the circulation of these pamphlets, were themselves illegal, and contrary to the foundation of all legitimate government, the rights of the people, the rights of man. He asserted, that there was at present more danger from the exploded doctrine of despotism, than from the new-fangled theory of republicanism; although some of the societies had indulged themselves in silly and frantic speculations, and had published toasts, which he thought objectionable. In speaking of French affairs,

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

he censured the recall of our minister from Paris ; and confessed, that he had rejoiced in the failure and retreat of the duke of Brunswick, because his success would have ruined, not merely the cause of liberty in France, but of liberty in England, and the liberty of man. He called the victory at Jemappe, a glorious victory, although it had made France mistress of the Netherlands, and of course facilitated the invasion of Holland. He concluded, with a motion, for omitting all those parts of the address, which acknowledged the existence of seditious practices at home, dangerous to the constitution, and also those which related to the hostile proceedings of the French government ; in the room of which, he proposed to substitute a few sentences, expressive of anxiety and concern at seeing measures adopted by the executive government, authorized by law only in cases of insurrection ; and assuring his majesty, that his faithful commons would make it their first business to inquire into the causes of parliament being assembled in a manner new and alarming to the country.

Mr. Pitt's seat in the house of commons, having been vacated, by his acceptance of the wardenship of the Cinque Ports, he was not present at this debate ; but, in reply to Mr.

Fox's speech, which excited no small astonishment, Mr. Dundas, and others, justly remarked, that the main point, which the house had to consider, was, whether the country was, at present, in a state of danger, or not? and that this point was not to be decided, by reasoning upon the probability or improbability, that Englishmen would wish to overturn the constitution, or, by a gratuitous denial of any co-operation, or hostile intention, on the part of France; but by a reference to facts. The facts alleged, in proof of the danger, were, the numerous societies of a mischievous tendency, established in every part of the kingdom; the addresses of these societies to the national convention, and the constant communication between their principal members, and French agents; the industrious circulation of seditious pamphlets; the actual insurrections in several specified places; and in one instance, where the tree of liberty, the emblem of French doctrines, had been planted amidst the shouts of "liberty and equality, no excise, no king;" the general alarm pervading the minds of persons of all ranks and descriptions, visible to every one not determined to shut his eyes against it, and evinced by the voluntary loyal associations, which had taken place, and by the declarations of attachment to the constitution, which had

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

been spontaneously made, in almost every part of the kingdom ; the decree of the national convention, which, under the pretence of assisting to give liberty to mankind, indicated an intention of disturbing the government of every country in Europe; their determination to open the Scheldt, which would be an act of direct hostility against Holland, our ally; their system of conquest and aggrandizement, exemplified by their annexation of Savoy to France, and their separation of the Netherlands from the dominions of Austria, evidently for the same purpose of uniting them to France ; and their naval armament, and other symptoms of hostility, against Great Britain : these were urged as incontrovertible proofs of the danger to which our constitution was exposed from internal disaffection, and of meditated aggression by France ; the present rulers of which, in addition to the old rivalry, and inveterate enmity, of that nation, had resolved to abolish monarchy, wherever their influence could be made to extend. And it was maintained, upon grounds equally incontrovertible, that the only mode of counteracting this joint design of domestic and foreign foes, and of averting the calamities which had desolated France, and now threatened this country, would be, by active and vigorous measures of

the legislature, accompanied by the timely exertions of the well-disposed parts of the community; that it was in vain to endeavor to remove discontents, by compliance or concession, when the constitution itself was held out as a grievance, and nothing less was aimed at, than a total subversion of the present system of government; when the people were taught, that the present was the time for them to assert their rights, and, with the assistance of France, to follow the example which France herself had set them.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

In the course of the debate, an appeal was made to the members, whether they had not, in their respective neighbourhoods, perceived such strong symptoms of disaffection, as fully justified his majesty's ministers, in embodying the militia, and summoning parliament; and their opinions appeared, by the majority which rejected Mr. Fox's amendment, the numbers being 290 and 50.

This decisive majority, however, did not deter Mr. Fox from renewing his opposition to the address, when reported on the following day, and from offering another amendment, the object of which was to induce his majesty to open a negotiation with France, for the purpose of preventing war. This amendment was rejected without a division.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

Mr. Fox still persevered, and brought the subject again before the house, the next day, in a more direct manner, by moving an address to the king, requesting his majesty to send a minister to Paris, to treat with the provisional executive government of France, touching such points as might be in discussion between his majesty and his allies, and the French nation. This motion, also, was rejected without a division.

Mr. Pitt was unanimously re-elected for the university of Cambridge, and took his seat on the 18th. He availed himself of the earliest opportunity of referring to the debates of the first three days of the session, at which he had not been present; and declared his conviction of the truth of the facts which had been stated, and his entire approbation of the arguments which had been urged, in support of the address; adding, that he knew, from unquestionable authority, the situation of the country still to be such, that the smallest spark might produce a dreadful explosion. He farther observed, that to send an ambassador to France *, under present circumstances,

* Marsh asks, " what reception could an ambassador of his Britannic majesty have expected from the president of the French convention, who had received with every mark of friendship, and every token of applause, the deputies of

would be incompatible with the dignity of the crown, and contrary to the interests of the public; and would moreover counteract, and solemnly disclaim, those very principles, on which the whole of our conduct was founded. To solicit any thing from France, would be to solicit the eternal disgrace of this country, and must be as useless as it would be ignominious. He heard, he said, with pleasure, of the decided opinion expressed by all parties, that if war should appear to be necessary, it ought to be carried on with vigor; but, at the same time, he assured the house, that nothing, consistent with the dignity of the crown, the internal safety of the country, and the general security of Europe, should be omitted by government, to avert the calamities of war.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

THE trial of the king of France, which was at this time depending, attracted very general and anxious attention in this kingdom; and on the 20th of December, Mr. Sheridan observed, in the house of commons, that if the French nation could, in any authentic manner, be apprized of the temper and feelings of the people of Great Britain relative to the critical situation of Louis and his family,

those societies who declared their resolution of overturning the British government and constitution?" p. 168.

CHAP. namely, that there was not a man, of any party
 { XV. or description, who did not deprecate, and
 1792. who would not deplore, the fate of those persecuted and unhappy victims, should the apprehended catastrophe take place, he was confident, that the knowledge of this circumstance would produce a considerable influence, he wished he could say a successful effect, upon the public mind in Paris, and throughout France. He did not undertake to propose the mode, by which this universal sentiment of England might be expressed; but he was more and more convinced, by the latest intelligence from France, that the opportunity ought not to be omitted.

Mr. Fox concurred with Mr. Sheridan, in wishing for some interposition, or declaration, on the part of Great Britain upon this interesting subject; and added, that he too had reason to believe, that there was a disposition in France, to attend to the opinions and sentiments of this country. He suggested, therefore, as the best mode which occurred to him of promoting the purpose in question, that the house should address the king, for a communication of the words or substance of his majesty's directions to lord Gower, in consequence of which his lordship left Paris; and then, that the house, in returning thanks to

his majesty for his gracious compliance with their request, should express their abhorrence of the proceedings of the national convention against the royal family of France.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

Mr. Pitt approved Mr. Sheridan's idea, and also the proposal of Mr. Fox, though he confessed himself less sanguine than either of those gentlemen, as to the effect, which any vote of that house, or any feeling of the British public, was likely to have upon the ruling party in the convention; and he immediately moved an address to the king, requesting a copy of his majesty's orders to lord Gower to quit Paris, after the deposition of their most christian majesties.

On the following day, a copy of these orders was presented to the house and read, the last clause of which was, " In all the conversations you may have occasion to hold before your departure, you will take especial care not to neglect any opportunity of declaring, that, at the same time his majesty means to observe the principles of neutrality, in every thing which regards the arrangement of the internal government of France, he does not conceive, that he departs from those principles, in manifesting, by every possible means in his power, his solicitude for the personal safety of their most christian majesties and their family.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

He most earnestly hopes, that his wishes in that respect will not be deceived; that the royal family will be preserved from every act of violence, the commission of which would not fail to excite sentiments of universal indignation throughout Europe."

Mr. Pitt said, that from the paper which had just been read, the house would perceive, what were the sentiments of his majesty last August, with respect to the then recent transactions in France, and the prospects then existing in that country; and which, he presumed, were the sentiments of every British heart upon the same subject. What must be those sentiments now, when such rigors and cruelties had been exercised; when a spirit of the utmost barbarity had been displayed; and nothing remained to look forward to, but that dreadful and final consummation, which could not fail to excite horror and indignation! The only difficulty was, in what terms that house should express itself suitable to the occasion. Considering the unanimity which prevailed, he had, at first, coincided with the gentlemen opposite to him, in thinking, that the best mode by which the sense of that house could be made known, would be by a vote, which might reach the whole of Europe, and the influence of which should extend to

France, and might, perhaps, there produce the effect so much to be desired. But, in turning the business over in his mind, a doubt had occurred to him, and had, since, been suggested to him by others, whether this would be the best mode of proceeding. This doubt had arisen, from reflecting, whether such a vote, which, to convey the feelings of the house, must be expressed in terms the most strong and indignant, might not, by alarming national pride and jealousy, have the effect, in that state of fury to which the minds of the French people were worked up, of hurrying on the commission of that very crime, which it was the earnest wish of the house, by their weight, to prevent. Influenced by this consideration, it appeared to him a better mode, simply to allow the paper, which had been presented, to remain upon the table of the house; and, therefore, he should make no other motion, unless he should see reason to alter his opinion, in the course of the discussion which might take place. He only farther observed, that this mode, while it guarded against the imputation of interference, would fully imply the concurrence of the house in his majesty's sentiments, and clearly shew, that they considered no confirmation or addition necessary.

CHAP. Mr. Fox, Mr. Sheridan, Mr. Burke, and Mr.
XV. Windham, avowing also a change in their
 1792. original wishes upon the subject, expressed
 their entire approbation of Mr. Pitt's present
 proposal ; and it was unanimously adopted,
 under an apprehension, that a more formal
 declaration of the sentiments of the house
 might offend and irritate the ruling party in
 France, and contribute to produce the event
 so warmly and universally deprecated.

We have seen, that this solicitude for the fate of the unfortunate Louis, had no influence upon his cruel and unrelenting enemies. Conceiving that their favorite republic could not be firmly established, while he was alive, they had determined to put him to death ; and no consideration could divert them from their sanguinary purpose.

ALTHOUGH in the present situation of the country, Mr. Pitt thought, that some addition ought to be made to the naval and military establishments, yet, as he was unwilling to consider war as quite inevitable, and reluctant to incur any great expence till it was absolutely necessary, the house of commons was called upon to vote only 25,000 seamen, and 17,344 land forces for the service of the following year. To these numbers no objec-

tion was made; but on the contrary Mr. Fox said, that he should readily have consented to a larger augmentation of the navy, if it had been desired by ministers.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

It was evident, that while assignats circulated in this country, the French government had it in their power to raise money to any amount, which might be transmitted to France*, or employed here in encouraging disaffection and riots†. It was indeed well known, that they had sent over assignats for both those purposes; and therefore a bill was introduced for preventing the circulation of assignats, or any paper issued by public authority in France. This bill was so obviously necessary, that it passed with scarcely any opposition.

Two other bills, equally necessary, passed with the same ease; the one for restraining the exportation of naval stores, arms and ammunition‡;

* Chalmers, in his estimate of the comparative strength of Great Britain, says, that in 1792, 2,900,000 ounces of silver, besides coin, were purchased in England with assignats, and sent to France; and Chaussard acknowledges, that it was intended to ruin the bank of England, by means of French assignats issued in England.

† The 25 millions of livres, mentioned in a former note, were transmitted in assignats.

‡ On the 8th of November 1791, the national assembly passed a decree, prohibiting the exportation of arms and ammunition from France.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

and the other for preventing the exportation of corn*. These were articles, with which it would have been manifestly unwise to supply France, under present circumstances,

The revolution had caused a great influx of Frenchmen into this kingdom, by far the greater part of whom had been compelled to fly from their native country by the fear of want, persecution, and death; but others had come for the sole purpose of exciting discontent and sedition among the lower classes of our community. To the former, who were in general men of unexceptionable principles and character, and objects of the greatest compassion, it was the pride and glory of Britons to afford protection and support; but to allow the latter to remain, and carry on their mischievous plans, would have been highly criminal on the part of government. The king was generally considered as possess-

* The French had already adopted a similar measure, for in the whole of the year 1792, no wheat of French growth was exported from France. The French purchased wheat in England, in December 1792, at a higher price than it was sold for in the French market, with the hope of occasioning a scarcity, and thereby exciting a general discontent, and thus promoting the wished for insurrection. The scarcity of corn in France was one great cause of discontent and commotion at the beginning of the revolution.

ing the power of sending aliens out of his dominions ; but so many years had elapsed, since this prerogative had been exercised, foreigners having been permitted to resort to and reside in this country without interruption or restraint, that the acting upon it would have been attended with material difficulty ; and it was also thought expedient to subject even those emigrants, who might with safety be permitted to continue in England, to certain regulations ; principally with a view, that they might the more easily be distinguished from persons of an opposite description. Ministers, therefore, determined to apply for a special act of the legislature, with provisions adapted to the particular circumstances of the present case, leaving the royal prerogative without any alteration. Accordingly, on the 19th of December, lord Grenville introduced into the house of lords, what has since been known by the name of the alien bill *. This bill enacted, that any alien, who should refuse to depart from the kingdom, when ordered by his majesty, should be liable to be committed to goal, to be brought to trial, to be sentenced to suffer imprisonment

* On the 18th of the preceding May, the national assembly had passed a decree relative to strangers resident in France, similar in principle to this bill.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

for a month, and afterwards to leave the kingdom within a limited time, and if he disobeyed, to be transported for life; that every alien, who had arrived in England since January the 1st, 1792, should give an account to a magistrate of the district where he lived, of his name, rank, occupation or description, and of the weapons, arms, and ammunition, which he possessed; that every alien, who should hereafter arrive, should give to the officer of the port, at which he landed, a similar account, and also of the place where he had principally resided during the preceding six months, and of the place to which he was going; that he should give up all arms except such as might be wanted for defence or dress, and should not leave the port at which he landed, or the place of his residence afterwards, without a passport; that his majesty might prohibit the landing of foreigners entirely, or direct that they should be landed only at certain ports; that his majesty might appoint the places where aliens should reside; and that copies of the above accounts received from aliens by magistrates or by port-officers, and of all passports, should be transmitted to the secretary of state.

Those members, who denied, that there was any connexion between French emissaries and

disaffected persons in this kingdom, and who maintained, that there was no danger of any interruption to the public tranquillity from the proceedings either of our own countrymen or of foreigners, objected to this bill, contending, that it was unprecedented, and that no proof of its necessity had been laid before parliament. It was admitted in reply, that there was indeed no precedent for the measure: but it was asserted, that the present crisis was also new and unprecedented; that this bill was called for by the known general situation of this country, and of France; and that to bring any particular proof of its necessity might defeat its object; that it was a measure of precaution and self-defence, calculated to counteract the machinations of the enemies of our constitution; that within a few days some of the members of the national convention had been in London, and even some of the assassins of the 2d of September: it was asked, whether under such circumstances, the executive government ought to remain, without a clear and defined power of controlling foreigners, and of guarding against their pernicious designs, either by sending them out of the country, or by subjecting their residence in it to strict regulation?

It was farther urged, that while other na-

CHAP.
XV,
1792.

tions were compelled by their fears to refuse an asylum alike to the guilty and to the unfortunate, to the harmless and to the mischievous, this bill enabled Great Britain to extend her hospitality to those, whom anarchy, injustice, and the most imminent personal danger, had driven from their homes, without exposing herself to the evils and calamities which had desolated France: this was, therefore, a measure not of rigor and oppression, but of benevolence and humanity; it received and protected the innocent and meritorious sufferer, while it rejected and expelled the rebel and assassin.

It may be justly observed, that it is of the very essence of a free constitution, in which the legislative and executive authorities are necessarily distinct and separate, that the legislature should, in extraordinary cases, invest the executive government with extraordinary powers, for the purpose of correcting any existing evil, or of warding off any impending danger. Such power may be unfit to be constantly intrusted to the executive magistrate; and yet, at a particular conjuncture, may be indispensable to the public safety. Upon this principle, the habeas corpus act, that palladium of British liberty, has been repeatedly suspended for a limited time since the revolution.

Of the same nature was the alien bill, which was intended to continue in force only till the end of the next session; and which was so evidently required by the present situation of the country, and so generally approved, that its opponents, conscious of the smallness of their number, and the unpopularity of their opinion, did not venture to call for a division in either house. It received the royal assent with the three other bills, on the 8th of January; and Mr. Pitt, not considering any other measure to be at present necessary, either for the preservation of public tranquillity, or as a defensive preparation against the hostile designs of France, proposed, that the house should adjourn to the 23d of January, to which no objection was made.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

The most remarkable circumstance, which attended these debates, was, the support given to administration by several members of both houses, of distinguished talents and of great influence, alluded to in a former chapter, who had hitherto opposed Mr. Pitt; and who now declared, that the principles avowed, and the sentiments expressed, by Mr. Fox, relative as well to the affairs of France as to the situation of our own country, rendered it impossible for them to act with him upon the present occasion. Alarmed by the danger which

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

threatened the kingdom, both from external and internal enemies, they conceived, that party spirit should be laid aside, and that all men, of all descriptions, forgetting former differences and contentions, should, from a sense of public duty, unite in supporting government, as the most effectual means of preserving the constitution, and maintaining the independence of the nation. They acknowledged, that the change of administration, which they had been so long laboring to effect, was no longer to be desired, as no person could be found, who enjoyed the confidence both of the crown and of the people, in the same degree as the present minister ; a consideration of the utmost importance at a time of foreign war and domestic disaffection. This was a subject frequently mentioned ; and Mr. Fox uniformly spoke of his old friends, who now disclaimed him, with great temper and moderation. He regretted the want of their concurrence with him, upon the measures which were then depending ; but he did not, he said, see any such disagreement, as should make it necessary for them to dissolve the political connexion, which had subsisted so many years. He endeavored to convince them, that they were deluded by the artifices of the minister, and misled by groundless

fears of danger. He reminded them of the strong objections they had formerly felt and urged against the mode, by which Mr. Pitt came into office ; and represented the inconsistency, of which they would be guilty, if, after so long an opposition, they should give him that systematic support, which some gentlemen pretended to be requisite in the present situation of the country. This was undoubtedly very politic conduct in Mr. Fox ; but there was in reality a fundamental difference between him and the persons in question, upon points, which involved the security of every public and every private blessing, and superseded all other considerations : it was a difference upon principle, which prevented their future re-union, and deprived Mr. Fox of his most respectable and powerful adherents.

It will now be necessary to give an account of several occurrences, which took place between the meeting of parliament, and the declaration of war by France, against Great Britain.

On the first of December, a French frigate, and several armed vessels, sailed up the Scheldt, in defiance of the remonstrances of the captain of the Dutch guard ship, stationed at the

CHAP. mouth of the river, for the purpose of bom-
 { XV. barding the citadel of Antwerp ; and this act,
 1792. being contrary both to express treaties, and
 to the law of nations, was, in fact, an avowal
 of a determination in the executive council,
 to go to war with Holland, and consequently
 with England, on account of the known con-
 nexion and alliance between those two coun-
 tries.

On the 15th of December, the convention declared, by a formal decree, that the principles upon which they acted, would not allow them to acknowledge any institution militating against the sovereignty of the people ; and therefore they ordered their generals, in all countries, which were, or should be hereafter, occupied by the French armies, to proclaim, in the name of the French nation, the sovereignty of the people, the suppression of all existing authorities and privileges, and the repeal of all taxes and public contributions ; to establish a provisional government, upon democratic principles ; and to seize, on the account of the French republic, all property belonging to the treasury, to the church, and to the prince or his adherents :—which was an unequivocal declaration of a design not to acknowledge any kingly government, and to overturn the constitution of every country,

into which the power of France should extend. The decree farther declared, that the French nation would treat as an enemy, that people, who, rejecting or renouncing liberty and equality, should choose to preserve, recall, or treat with, its prince and privileged orders :—which was a declaration of war against every nation that refused to take up arms against its lawful sovereign. This decree, as well as that of the 19th of November, to which it was a sequel, were known to be particularly directed against England *.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

On the 24th of the same month, M. Baraillon, one of the few temperate members of the national convention, observed, that the decree of the 19th of November had caused uneasiness to the British ministers ; and therefore he proposed a supplementary clause for confining it to those nations, with which the French should be actually at war : but the previous question being demanded, without any debate, the proposal was virtually rejected by a vote, that there was no room for deliberation upon the subject.

* Mr. Miles, who lived many years upon the continent, and was employed by Mr. Pitt to procure secret intelligence, said, “ I have reason to believe, that these decrees were levelled at this country, in consequence of the delusion which prevailed in France, that we were on the eve of an insurrection in England, and that the promise of support would instantly produce an explosion.”

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

One of the numerous French agents in London, assured Mr. Miles, at the end of November, that he was commissioned by the executive council, to treat with the British ministers, relative to the differences between Great Britain and France, and requested, that Mr. Pitt might be informed of his desire to wait upon him, for that purpose ; but, at the same time, he would not allow his name to be mentioned. Mr. Pitt, upon receiving this communication, consented to see the person, without knowing his name ; but, before the day fixed for the interview arrived, a friend of Mr. Pitt saw the person at the house of Mr. Miles, and, upon questioning him, discovered, that he had no authority or instruction whatever from the executive council. This man, however, said, that there was another person, M. Maret, in London, fully empowered to enter into a negotiation with the English government. Mr. Pitt, having understood, that M. Maret was confidentially employed by M. le Brun, the French minister for foreign affairs, agreed to receive him on the 2d of December. At this interview, it appeared that M. Maret had in reality no authority to treat ; but he declared his firm belief, that the executive council was desirous of setting on foot a friendly explanation, through private agents, without any

official character. Mr. Pitt replied, that such a mode of explanation was much to be wished, as the most probable means of avoiding those extremities, which the conduct and designs of France gave great reason to apprehend; and he particularly mentioned the decree of the 19th of November, and the announced intention of opening the Scheldt, as clear indications of a hostile disposition, on the part of France. The conversation ended, by M. Maret's promise to inform M. le Brun immediately, of Mr. Pitt's readiness to enter into a negotiation with any person, duly authorized by the executive government; and it was evident, that M. Maret himself expected to be appointed. He waited upon Mr. Pitt again, after the return of his courier from Paris, and stated, that the executive council declined giving the required power to any private individual, as their intentions might be known through M. Chauvelin, who was properly accredited at the court of London. Mr. Pitt observed, that M. Chauvelin was not accredited; and M. Maret, after some general remarks upon the situation of the two countries, and expressions of personal civility, took his leave. Le Brun, in reporting this transaction, represented to the national convention, that Mr. Pitt had, through fear, solicited a con-

CHAP.
XV.

1792.

CHAP. XV. 1792. {ference with the secret agents of the executive council, but that he (Le Brun) had forbidden them to hold any communication with the English minister.

These facts fully show, on the one hand, Mr. Pitt's eagerness to omit no opportunity, which afforded the remotest chance of preventing a rupture with France; and on the other, the determination of the executive council not to adopt any proposal, which should, in the slightest degree, endanger their favorite plan of war with Great Britain. They knew that M. Maret was himself disposed to peace; and therefore they considered him very unfit to act as a negotiator. They soon afterwards employed M. Chauvelin, who was far better suited to their purpose.

As the deposition of the king of France, had rendered the credentials of lord Gower no longer of any avail, so the same event had put an end to the diplomatic character of M. Chauvelin, the ambassador of his most christian majesty at the court of London; and letters of recall were actually sent to him, soon after lord Gower's departure from Paris. But M. Chauvelin, instead of obeying the order, represented to the executive council, that though he was ill with the English minister, he was perfectly well with Mr. Fox, and

some other members of opposition, and that it would not be prudent in France to lose the fruits of his labors with those gentlemen, and their subsequent services, for a vain form of diplomatic etiquette; and the French government, finding, from this representation, as well as from the general tenor of his dispatches, that his views and principles were the same as their own, permitted him to remain in England *. Nor was his continuance here objected to by our ministers, who did not, at this time, despair of the preservation of peace; and were unwilling to take any step, which might be offensive to the new government of France. As he was known to keep up a constant communication with the executive council, lord Grenville declared to him, in the

* M. Chauvelin arrived in England as ambassador in the spring of 1792, and immediately formed a close connexion with the leading members of opposition. Before the negotiation commenced, which will be presently related, he shewed his secret instructions to an intimate friend of Mr. Fox; and he promoted disaffection and hostility to the existing government, by all the means in his power, during his whole residence in England. After the deposition of the king, he said, that if he were not received at St. James's, the height of his ambition would be, to leave England with a declaration of war.—Marsh. Mr. Miles, who was well acquainted with his character, observed, that if a pretext for a quarrel between the two countries had been sought, France could not have selected a fitter object for the purpose than M. Chauvelin.

CHAP.
XV.
1792.

same spirit which had uniformly actuated the British cabinet, that outward forms would be dispensed with by his Britannic majesty, in the discussion of any question relative to explanations, which might be satisfactory and advantageous to both parties; and Mr. Pitt assured him, that he was desirous of avoiding war, and wished to receive a testimony of the same disposition from the French ministry.

This being a virtual acknowledgment, that the present rulers in France were capable of maintaining the relations of amity and peace, which was afterwards confirmed by what passed between Mr. Pitt and M. Maret, the executive council considered it impossible to decline all negotiation with England; and therefore, on the 27th of December, M. Chauvelin delivered a note to lord Grenville, in which he said, that he was authorized to declare, that it was the desire of the French government to continue on good terms with the court of London*, and to demand of the

* "That the French nation have spoken so speciously, and have acted so infamously, is no wonder, because systematic deception is a constituent part of their general plan; but that so many men of talents and penetration could suffer themselves to be duped by their artifices, is really a wonder. Fortunately, however, for Great Britain, our ministers saw more clearly, or we should now have shared the wretched fate which has befallen the Dutch and the Swiss."—Marsh. v. ii. p. 86, who is here speaking of the year 1799. The

British ministers, whether France was to consider England, as a hostile or a neutral power. Under pretence of removing all ground of complaint against France, on the part of Great Britain, he proceeded to explain the decree of the 19th of November; asserting, that the national convention did not intend to favor insurrections, or espouse the quarrels of a few seditious persons, or endeavor to excite disturbances in any neutral or friendly country; and that the decree was applicable only to those people, who, after having acquired their liberty by conquest*, might request the fraternity and assistance of the French republic, by a solemn and unequivocal expression of the general will. M. Chauvelin said also, that he was charged to declare formally, that France would not attack Holland, while that power confined itself, on its part, within the bounds of strict neutrality.

opposition between the actions and the declarations of the French government is strongly marked in Marsh's valuable work.

* This expression supposes, that the people have already recovered their liberty, which is directly contrary to the words of the decree, *qui voudront recouvrir la liberté*, who shall wish to recover their liberty, that is, who shall be desirous of effecting a revolution. Besides, those who had already recovered their liberty without the assistance of France, and were actuated by a "general will," would scarcely afterwards stand in need of the assistance of any foreign power.

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

Having given this explanation upon these two points, he observed, that the only remaining difficulty related to the opening of the Scheldt, a question irrevocably decided by reason and justice*, of little importance in itself, and on which the opinion of England, and perhaps even of Holland, was so well known, as to render it difficult to make it seriously the single cause of war. If, however, the British ministers should consider the opening of the Scheldt a sufficient ground for a rupture, the whole blame and responsibility of the war would rest with them; and France would make this evident by an appeal to the English nation, "a generous and free people, who would not long consent to betray their own interests, by serving as an auxiliary and a reinforcement to a tyrannical coalition."

Lord Grenville, in his answer sent on the 31st of December, observed, that all England saw in the decree of November the 19th, the formal declaration of a design to extend uni-

* The Dutch territories extended on both sides of the Scheldt for some distance from its mouth, and therefore the exclusive navigation of that part of the river belonged, according to the law of nations, or "reason and justice," to Holland. This right was, moreover, secured to her by a variety of treaties, from 1648 to 1785, when it was last confirmed, and guaranteed to the Dutch by the French themselves.

versally the new principles of government adopted in France, and to encourage disorder and revolt in all countries, even in those which were neutral; and that this design, as far as Great Britain was concerned, was exemplified by the public reception given to the promoters of sedition in this kingdom, and by the speeches made to them by the president of the national convention, precisely at the time of this decree, and on several subsequent occasions: that the explanation now given of this decree, so far from being satisfactory, must be considered as a fresh avowal of those dispositions, which had caused so much uneasiness and jealousy; inasmuch as it reserved to France a right of mixing herself in the internal affairs of this country, whenever she should judge it proper; and on principles incompatible with the political institutions of other nations, contrary to the respect which is reciprocally due from independent states, and repugnant to the conduct of Great Britain, in abstaining, at all times, from any interference whatever in the internal affairs of France.

Lord Grenville farther remarked, that the declaration now made, that France will not attack Holland, so long as that power shall observe a strict neutrality, was expressed nearly in the same terms with that which was

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

made by M. Chauvelin, in the month of June last ; since which, a French officer had sailed up the Scheldt, to attack the citadel of Antwerp, notwithstanding the known determination of the Dutch government not to grant that passage, and the formal protest by which they opposed it ; and that at the very moment, France, under the name of an amicable explanation, renewed her promise of respecting the independence and rights of England, and her allies, she announced her intention to maintain this open and injurious aggression : that on such a declaration, therefore, no reliance could be placed for the continuance of public tranquillity. If it were true, that the question of opening the Scheldt was of little importance, it would serve to prove more clearly, that it was brought forward only for the purpose of insulting the allies of England, by the infraction of their neutrality, and by the violation of their rights, expressly secured to them by the faith of treaties : it was, however, well known, that the utmost importance was attached by the British government to the principles, which France wished to establish by this proceeding, and to the consequences which would naturally result from them ; and that those principles, and those consequences, would never be admitted by

England, but that she was, and ever would be, ready to oppose them with all her force. France, continued lord Grenville, can have no right to annul the stipulations relative to the Scheldt, unless she have also the right to set aside all the other treaties between all the powers of Europe, and all the other rights of England, and of her allies. She can even have no pretence to interfere in the question of opening the Scheldt, unless she were the sovereign of the low countries, or had the right to dictate laws to all Europe. England will never consent, that France should arrogate the power of annulling at her pleasure, and under the pretence of a natural right, of which she makes herself the only judge, the political system of Europe, established by solemn treaties, and guaranteed by the consent of all the powers. This government, adhering to the maxims which it has followed for more than a century, will also never see with indifference, that France shall make herself, either directly or indirectly, sovereign of the low countries, or general arbitress of the rights and liberties of Europe.

“ If France be really desirous of maintaining friendship and peace with England, she must shew herself disposed to renounce her views of aggression and aggrandizement,

CHAP.

XV.

1792.

CHAP. and to confine herself within her own terri-
 XV. tory, without insulting other governments,
 1792. without disturbing their tranquillity, without
 violating their rights.”—“ His majesty has
 always been desirous of peace: he desires
 it still; but such as may be real and solid,
 and consistent with the interests and dignity
 of his own dominions, and with the general
 security of Europe.”

Lord Grenville concluded by informing
 M. Chauvelin, that he had no answer to give
 on the subject of the appeal proposed to be
 made by France to the English nation; and
 by declaring, that Great Britain, according
 to that constitution, by which its liberty and
 its prosperity are secured, and which it will
 always be able to defend against any attack,
 direct or indirect, will never have with foreign
 powers, connexion or correspondence, except
 through the organ of its king.

This explicit and spirited answer of lord
 Grenville was transmitted to France; and on
 the 8th of January, Le Brun, the minister for
 foreign affairs, signed a note in the name of
 the executive council, addressed to M. Chau-
 velin, and by him delivered on the 13th, to
 lord Grenville. In this note, the executive
 council repeated and defended M. Chauvelin's
 interpretation of the decree of the 19th of

November, and asserted their right and determination to open the Scheldt, as well as their intention to keep possession of the Netherlands during the war, and “as much longer as might be necessary for the Belgians to secure and consolidate their liberty;” and they declared, as their ultimatum, that if their explanations upon these points, were not satisfactory to the British ministers, and if the armaments were still continued in the ports of England, the French government would prepare for war.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

On the 18th of January, lord Grenville acquainted M. Chauvelin, that M. Le Brun's note was by no means satisfactory, as the explanations contained in it were confined nearly to those points, to which he had already replied, and as it renewed the declaration of the design of the French government to interfere in the internal affairs of other countries, to annul treaties, and to violate the rights of his majesty's allies: to which he added, that to threaten Great Britain with war, because she judged it expedient to augment her forces, and also to declare, upon a former occasion, that a solemn treaty should be broken *, because England adopted, for

* M. Chauvelin remonstrated against the alien bill, while it was depending in parliament, as an infraction of the com-

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

her own safety, such precautions as already existed in France, could only be considered as new grounds of offence, which, as long as they subsisted, would prove a bar to every kind of negotiation. And, therefore, as it could not promote the object of conciliation, again to discuss the subjects upon which he had before delivered his opinion, he thought it his duty to inform him, in the most positive terms, that his majesty's ministers, although still ready to receive satisfactory explanations from the government of France, would, under existing circumstances, continue all those preparations, which they might judge necessary to protect the safety, the tranquillity, and the rights of their own country, as well as to guarantee those of its allies; and to oppose a barrier to those views of ambition and aggrandizement, at all times dangerous to the rest of Europe, but which were rendered still more so, from being supported by the propagation of principles destructive of all social order.

It is to be observed, that the three main points upon which lord Grenville insisted in

mércial treaty; and after it had passed, he declared, that the French republic considered that treaty as no longer binding. He also complained of the steps taken by the English government, to prevent the exportation of corn.

this negotiation, namely the decree of the 19th of November, the opening of the Scheldt, and the occupation of the Netherlands, had no reference whatever to the internal form of the French government ; and therefore, if it had been the object of the executive council merely to establish and maintain a republic in France, they might safely have conceded every one of those points, which would unquestionably have prevented war with Great Britain. They had no reason to suppose, that the British ministers were inclined to depart from that neutrality, which it was acknowledged they had hitherto strictly observed ; and indeed the readiness manifested by Mr. Pitt and lord Grenville, to treat with any person duly authorized by the executive council, was a positive proof of their desire to avoid a rupture with France. Not even a wish was expressed by the English government, upon this or any other occasion, for the restoration of monarchy ; nor was a single objection made to any of the proceedings of the national convention, or any of the measures of the French ministers, which did not affect the security and independence of foreign states. But most unfortunately for the peace and happiness of the world, the Jacobins of France were not contented with overturning

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

the constitution of their own country ; nor was their ambition satisfied with the acquisition and peaceable exercise of sovereign power in the antient limits of that kingdom, extensive and populous as it was. They had formed the wildest projects of conquest and aggrandizement ; and were unalterably determined to exert the whole strength of France by sea and land, in conjunction with all the secret arts of intrigue, to carry their revolutionary system into every part of Europe. Trusting to the addresses of the democratic societies, presented to the national convention, as speaking the sense of the nation, and relying upon the reports of their own emissaries, they vainly imagined, that the bulk of the English people were dissatisfied with their government ; and that the commencement of hostilities on the part of France, would be immediately followed by a general insurrection throughout the kingdom, and by an open declaration of such numbers in favor of republican principles, as might at once cause the overthrow of the constitution*, or at least lead to civil commotions of such extent, as

* Many of the leading members of the national convention at this time predicted the speedy " overthrow of royal and noble tyranny in England : " — " Let the head of Louis," said one of them, " fall, and George the third, and his minister Pitt, will feel if their heads rest firm on their shoulders."

could not fail to promote the success of the French arms.

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

These designs and these expectations induced the executive council to resolve on war with this country ; and the previous negotiation was only intended as some sort of compliance with the usual forms upon such occasions, and to gain time till their plans should be ripe for execution. It might also be imagined that, by the use of menacing and insulting language in their refusal to give a satisfactory explanation upon the subjects in dispute, the British government might be provoked to commence hostilities, by which the French would have avoided the reproach of being the first aggressors.

From the moment the Jacobins usurped the government of France, they adopted a system of deception in all their proceedings, with respect to foreign countries, unexampled in the history of any civilized nation ; and this should always be remembered in reading the professions and assertions in their public and official documents. The correspondence, of which an account has just been given, was, on the part of the executive council, an act of the grossest duplicity ; and it exhibited several instances of a total disregard to fact and truth ; some of which it may be proper to notice.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

Le Brun, in his note, said, "the French republic has renounced, and still renounces, all conquest;" which assertion was made, not only after the conquest of the Netherlands, and of several parts of Germany, but after the incorporation of the duchy of Savoy, which had also been conquered by the French armies, by a formal and unanimous decree of the national convention; and, only three weeks before, Nice, and its territories, were annexed to France with the same unanimity. The French had, likewise, recently commenced hostilities against Geneva and several states of Italy; and secret preparations were at that time making for the invasion of the Swiss cantons. This renunciation, therefore, of conquest was contrary to the prior, the present, and the subsequent conduct of the French government; and the executive council, when they directed Le Brun to sign the note to lord Grenville, must have been conscious, that they were giving their sanction to a palpable falsehood.

Le Brun also declared, in the same note, that the French republic would respect the independence of the Netherlands; and, on the next day, the executive council, who had directed this declaration to be made, signed instructions to the commissaries in Belgium,

as they called the Netherlands, the object of which was, to reduce the Belgians to a state of absolute dependence upon France; and these commissaries, acting under the instructions they had received, on the 3d of February incorporated Belgium with France, by a formal instrument, which was afterwards confirmed by a decree of the national convention; although one of the commissaries, in writing to Le Brun, admitted, that by far the greater part of the inhabitants were adverse to the incorporation. And they not only united Belgium to France, but they sequestered all the ecclesiastical property, and pronounced it to belong to the nation, without consulting the Belgians themselves upon the subject, and, as it is well known, in direct contradiction to their wishes. It is scarcely possible to conceive conduct more diametrically opposite to professions.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

The reluctance of the Belgians to an incorporation with France, seems to have been foreseen by the executive council; for, in their instructions to their commissaries, they declared, nearly in the words of the decree of the 15th of December, "that the French nation would consider as enemies a whole people, who, refusing liberty and equality, should be disposed to treat with a prince and

CHAP. privileged orders." This conduct of the
 XV. French government towards the Austrian
 1793. Netherlands, was a practical example of the
 universal right, which the convention had
 asserted, to conquer and annex to France
 any country, which had hitherto been sub-
 ject to another power, or to overthrow any
 constitution, which even the people them-
 selves wished to preserve; and could not
 possibly be reconciled with M. Chauvelin's
 explanation of the decree of the 29th of No-
 vember, in which it was said, "that the French
 would not interfere in the internal affairs of
 any country, except where a general wish
 was expressed for their fraternity and assis-
 tance."

To the proofs, which have been already
 adduced, of the fixed intention of the French
 government to engage in war with this coun-
 try, the following circumstances, which oc-
 curred subsequently to the commencement of
 M. Chauvelin's negotiation, may be added;
 and they will also furnish fresh instances of
 the duplicity of the French rulers.

The marine minister, Monge, in a circular
 letter to the seaports of France, speaking
 of the "English republicans," said, "We
 will fly to their assistance; we will make a

descent upon that island; we will hurl thither 50,000 caps of liberty; we will plant there the sacred tree, and stretch out our arms to our brother republicans; the tyranny of their government shall soon be destroyed: may we all be strongly animated with this thought!" This letter, and a resolution of the executive council, sent with it on the 7th of January, the day before Le Brun signed the note to lord Grenville, caused great activity in all the French sea-ports, where it was considered as the signal for an immediate attack upon England; and on the 13th, three days after the order was given for the invasion of Holland, an augmentation of 30 ships of the line was made to the French navy, for the avowed purpose of acting against the English; although the French had then in commission more ships than were preparing in the English ports. It seems, therefore, clear, that the French executive council fully expected, that the commencement of hostilities against Holland would be immediately followed by war with Great Britain; and, indeed, the common interests of the two countries, and the treaty known to subsist between them, rendered this inference unavoidable.

Dumourier confessed, that Le Brun, in the early part of January, desired him to pay no

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

regard to the negotiation then depending with England and Holland; meaning, of course, that this negotiation was not intended to produce any effect; and that, in concerting measures for the next campaign, which was then the subject of their deliberations, he was to consider war with those two countries as certain. This determination of the executive council, Dumourier, on the 10th of January communicated to general Miranda, who in his absence commanded the French army in the Netherlands, and directed him to make arrangements with all possible secrecy for invading the Dutch dominions within twelve days; giving him particular instructions with respect to the places he was to attack, and the number of forces he was to employ, according to a plan settled with the French minister;* and authorizing him to raise money for defraying the expences of this expedition, by means of a forced loan at Antwerp, provided the capitalists of that city refused to advance the necessary sum voluntarily. And yet, only two days after these secret orders and instructions were given for the invasion of Holland, the convention passed a decree, directing the executive council

* The invasion of Holland did not take place at this time, as will be afterwards mentioned.

to inform the British government, that it was the intention of the French republic to maintain peace and fraternity with England, and to respect her independence and that of her allies, so long as they should not attack France: "So daring and so solemn a falsehood," says Marsh, "had probably never been uttered by statesmen of any country, till French philosophy and French republicanism had set religion and honor at defiance."

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

An introduction to a decree of the 13th of January, mentioned the naval preparations in England, of which the national convention had just received information, as a departure from the character of neutrality hitherto observed by that country with respect to the affairs of France, which must be considered as an authentic acknowledgement, that Great Britain had not been guilty of any provocation or offence at the time France had resolved upon war. It was well known, that the preparations here alluded to, were merely of a defensive nature, caused by the manifest hostile disposition of France, and by no means calculated for any act of aggression, being much inferior to the French naval force actually ready for service.

On the 25th of January, a report was made to the national convention, relative to the or-

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

ganization of the land forces, in which it was proposed, that England should be invaded with an army of 40,000 men; and an expedition was also in contemplation against the Cape of Good Hope, under the command of La Clos, who was afterwards to proceed to the East Indies, join Tippoo Saib, and attack Bengal.

Although the French government had determined upon war, as is fully proved by these irrefragable testimonies, M. Chauvelin, by order of the executive council, formally demanded on the 17th of January, that the court of Great Britain should receive him as the accredited minister of the French republic. This application could have been made with no other view, than to afford some pretext for a measure, on which the executive council had long resolved; and the answer must have been anticipated by them. On the 20th, lord Grenville informed M. Chauvelin, that under the present circumstances his majesty did not think proper to receive his letters of credence; and, on the 23d, the earliest day on which intelligence of the king's refusal could have reached Paris, an order was sent to him from thence to return to France. On the 24th, however, before it was possible for this recall to be known in England, the British ministers, having received information of the

execution of the king of France, ordered M. Chauvelin to leave London within eight days.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

It appears that general Miranda, from want of sufficient magazines, was not enabled to execute the orders he had received for the immediate invasion of Holland; and therefore the executive council, finding it convenient to carry on their system of duplicity a little longer, pretended that they were desirous of opening a new negotiation both with England and Holland, under the auspices of general Dumourier*. De Mauldet† was actually sent to lord Auckland, the British ambassador at the Hague, to propose a conference between him and Dumourier, to which lord Auckland, knowing the general wishes of his court for peace, consented without hesitation; and having also obtained the consent of the Dutch government to concur in the negotiation, he sent a courier to England for full instructions. On the 26th of January Maret was sent from Paris to London, for the purpose of inquiring, whether the English ministers would treat with

* Dumourier confessed, that the executive council had at this time determined upon war with England. Vide lord Auckland's speech in the house of lords on the 9th of January, 1798.

† He had been the French ambassador at the Hague.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

Dumourier; and, in case they would, to procure a passport for him. On the road M. Maret met M. Chauvelin returning to Paris; and probably thinking, that his dismissal might cause some alteration in the wishes of the executive council, he wrote to Le Brun from Dover, requesting farther instructions, and acquainting him, that he should wait in London to receive them, before he applied for an interview with the English minister. It has been supposed, that M. Maret, who was not sufficiently in the confidence of the executive council, to be trusted with the real design of his own mission, entertained some hope of being himself empowered to negotiate with the British cabinet; but no answer whatever being sent by Le Brun, he left London, after remaining there eight days, without any communication either with Mr. Pitt or lord Grenville, except two formal notes to the latter, the one announcing his arrival to take charge of the diplomatic papers of the French envoy, and the other notifying his departure*. In the mean time the English ministers received lord Auckland's dispatches, and although they

* On the 12th of February, Mr. Pitt declared in the house of commons, that M. Maret, during his whole stay in London, had proposed to his majesty's ministers no questions of state whatever.

had been previously informed of an embargo being laid on all British vessels and subjects in France, yet they immediately authorized him to enter into a negotiation with Dumourier; and lord Auckland, with as little delay, proposed the 11th of February, as the day for holding the first conference, at which the grand pensionary of Holland was also to have been present. But this conference did not take place.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

THE house of commons met on the 23d of January, and adjourned to the 28th, on which day a message was presented from the king, stating, that he had giving directions for laying before the house, copies of a correspondence which had passed between M. Chauvelin and his majesty's secretary of state for foreign affairs, and of an order to M. Chauvelin to quit the kingdom, in consequence of the atrocious act recently perpetrated at Paris; and acquainting the house, that in the present situation of affairs, his majesty had thought it necessary to make a farther augmentation of his forces by sea and land, and that he relied upon the known affection and zeal of the house of commons to enable him to take the most effectual measures, in the present important conjuncture, for maintaining the security

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

and rights of his own dominions, for supporting his allies, and for opposing views of aggrandizement and ambition on the part of France, which would be at all times dangerous to the general interests of Europe, but which were peculiarly so, when connected with the propagation of principles, leading to the violation of the most sacred duties, and utterly subversive of the peace and order of society.

On a following day, Mr. Pitt, in moving an address in answer to this message, grounded upon the papers presented, first adverted to that calamitous event, the murder of the French king, which he described as revolting to the feelings of nature, as outraging every sentiment of religion, justice, and humanity, and as having excited general indignation and abhorrence in this island, and most undoubtedly in every other civilized country. In this dreadful transaction, he said, might be seen the effect of principles, pushed to their utmost extent, which set out with dissolving all the bonds of civil society, and which, presumptuously relying on wild and delusive theories, rejected all the advantages to be derived from the wisdom and experience of former ages, and even the sacred instructions of revelation itself. Hence, however, was suggested an useful subject for reflection: for, by considering the

pernicious tendency of those principles, and learning to guard against their progress, this kingdom might be preserved from suffering the evils which had disgraced and ruined a neighboring country, and from exhibiting a similar scene of calamity and guilt. He contrasted the happy condition of England, in which there existed the greatest national felicity, and an equal protection was afforded to every individual, with the present situation of France, where a system of the utmost licentiousness and insecurity prevailed, and anarchy operated through a thousand organs to produce unnumbered mischiefs. Jacobinism had given a more fatal blow to liberty, than the boldest attempts of the most aspiring monarch.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

Mr. Pitt next pointed out the strict neutrality observed by his majesty, in the domestic affairs of France, and the manner in which the national assembly had received the addresses from the seditious societies in England. He then referred to one of the papers under consideration, in which the French rulers disclaimed all ideas of conquest and aggrandizement, promised to respect the rights of his majesty and his allies, and protested against every interference in the internal government of neutral countries, on the ground, that such

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

interference would be inconsistent with the law of nations—thus, by anticipation, passing sentence upon their own conduct, which had since been in direct contradiction to these professions and engagements, and which clearly shewed, that wherever the influence of French arms or of French principles extended, revolutions must follow. He farther remarked, that the explanations contained in another of the papers, could only be considered as renewed insults, and as a decisive proof of the hostile intentions of France towards Great Britain. Indeed, M. Chauvelin had expressly declared as an ultimatum, that, if the satisfaction then offered, which in fact asserted a right to violate treaties, and to overturn the constitution of any country, were not accepted, the French would prepare for war. Under these circumstances, Mr. Pitt, conceiving it scarcely possible that war could be avoided, thought it his duty to propose an address to the king, which, after thanking his majesty for his communication of the correspondence, and offering the heart-felt condolence of the house on the atrocious deed lately perpetrated at Paris, expressed their sense of the ambitious and aggressive system of French policy; declared their conviction of the necessity of a vigorous opposition to such conduct, and to

the principles out of which it arose ; and promised to make a suitable provision for a farther augmentation of the national forces by sea and land.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

Mr. Fox acknowledged, that Mr. Pitt had stated the grounds of complaint against France ably and accurately ; but still he deprecated war as an evil, which, under present circumstances, would be peculiarly injurious to this country ; admitting, however, that we were bound to supply the Dutch with the contingent of troops stipulated by treaty, as the preservation of national faith and honor was paramount to every other consideration. Although he reprobated in the strongest terms the execution of Louis the 16th, who had, he said, been tried and condemned, in violation of all the rules of criminal justice, without any existing law to which he was personally amenable, and even contrary to laws which at that time actually existed, and who had received from his enemies nothing but insulting asperity, instead of that republican magnanimity which they professed, yet he saw neither propriety nor wisdom in passing judgment upon an act committed in another nation, which had no direct reference to this kingdom, it being an undisputed maxim of policy, that domestic crimes perpetrated in one independent state,

CHAP. were not cognizable by another. He objected
 XV. to the address, as condemning principles, the
 1793. abuse only of which ought to be blamed. The
 principles themselves were those, on which all
 just and equitable government was founded,
 but he admitted, that they had been carried
 too far by the French ; at the same time con-
 tending, that their sense of the word equality
 was perfectly innocent, as signifying merely
 that “ all men are equal in respect to their
 rights.” He maintained, that the people were
 the sovereigns in every state ; and that they
 had a right to change the form of their go-
 vernment, and to cashier their governors for
 misconduct.

Mr. Windham in reply said, that he could
 by no means join Mr. Fox in his approbation
 of French principles, which, abstractedly con-
 sidered, appeared to him as false in theory,
 as they had been proved to be mischievous in
 practice. He desired to enter his protest
 against the doctrine, that the people, or
 a majority of them, had a right to make or
 unmake governments, according to their ca-
 price ; but this being a nice and intricate
 subject, he declined entering into it any far-
 ther at present. From the avowed disposi-
 tion of the French rulers, he thought hos-
 tilities inevitable ; and considering that the

object of the war on our part was the security of the country, and that principles and opinions, from which the greatest danger was to be apprehended, when supported and propagated by arms, must be opposed by arms, he gave his unqualified assent to the motion. The address passed without a division.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

THESE and the other proceedings of the British government relative to the augmentation of the army and navy were fully justified by the event; for, on the 1st of February the national convention, finding their plans ripe for execution, unanimously* declared war against Great Britain and Holland.

* The convention was at this time divided into two parties, who were struggling for superiority, of which Brissot and Robespierre were the respective leaders; but they agreed upon the subject of commencing hostilities against Great Britain. Afterwards, when the war was taking an unfavorable turn for France, these two parties quarrelled, and each reproached the other with having been the cause of this war—an additional proof that its origin is to be ascribed to France.—“The mad ambition of the French rulers, their determination to extirpate all kingly governments, and the confident expectation of insurrection in every part of Europe, aided by the necessity of finding employment for their turbulent armies, were their motives to war in general; and their firm belief, that the inhabitants of Great Britain were so disaffected to their government, that French assistance would induce them to an immediate revolt, the inconsiderable number of troops at that time in Great Britain, in comparison with those which could easily be spared from

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

In this declaration of war, nothing is laid to the charge of England, prior to the seventeenth of August, when the British ambassador was recalled from Paris; since which time the measures of the British government had only been such as were dictated by the principles of precaution and self-defence against the manifestly hostile disposition of France. Indeed the decree of the 13th of January, just now mentioned, acknowledged, that the English had done nothing inconsistent with the character of neutrality to that day, before which it has appeared, that the French themselves had resolved on war with England and Holland; and the measure then complained of was only a moderate augmentation of our navy, which the naval armaments of France had rendered indispensably necessary.

It seems scarcely possible to conceive more satisfactory and convincing proofs respecting any political event, than those, by which it has

France, the forward state of the French navy, the persuasion that the landing upon the British coast would be attended with no difficulty, and the immense advantages expected from the acquisition of British wealth, commerce, and marine, in the prosecution of their conquests on the continent;—all these motives, added to the innate desire of crushing an antient and formidable, but at that time despised, rival, induced them to a war with Great Britain in particular.”*

* Marsh, v. ii. p. 230.

been here established, that the origin of the revolutionary war is to be attributed solely to France.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

As we are now arrived at a marked epoch in Mr. Pitt's administration, it may be right to take a brief review of his principal measures, from the time he was placed at the head of the treasury, towards the end of December 1783, to the declaration of war by France against this country, in the beginning of February 1793.

It will be remembered, that Mr. Pitt was appointed to the situation of prime minister, when he was only in the 25th year of his age, and under circumstances of a very peculiar and formidable nature; that a few days afterwards, by a singular act of disinterestedness, he declined an office for life of 3,000*l.* a year, and disposed of it in the manner most conducive to the public good; that he was immediately called upon to resist, almost singly, a band of veteran politicians and powerful debaters, supported by a majority in the house of commons; and that he maintained the most extraordinary parliamentary contest recorded in our history, with a firmness, judgment, eloquence, and ability, which excited universal admiration, procured him the con-

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

fidence of his sovereign, and of the nation at large ; and at length silenced the opposition of that very house of commons, which had at first declared itself so decidedly and so vehemently hostile to his appointment.

Having succeeded in defending the true principles of the constitution against the most violent and dangerous attacks, and being securely seated in office by the defeat and disgrace of his antagonists, he found, that of all the difficulties, under which the country was laboring, the depressed state of its finances was by far the most serious and urgent. The public income was several millions less than the expenditure ; there was an unfunded debt of nearly thirty millions, totally unprovided for ; and the funds, instead of rising upon the restoration of peace, had fallen fifteen per cent since the preliminaries were signed. Though such was the deplorable condition of the revenue, and of public credit, yet Mr. Pitt, contemplating the resources of the kingdom in his penetrating and comprehensive mind, was convinced of the practicability of raising the public income, till it should not only become equal to the expenditure, but also leave a surplus applicable to the gradual reduction of the national debt ; and he boldly determined to direct his immediate attention

to the attainment of this most desirable purpose.

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

In the years 1784 and 1785, he funded all the navy and victualling bills, and ordnance debentures, and proposed taxes, which, he calculated, would produce 1,300,000*l.* annually; and in the former of those years, he introduced the commutation act, and other acts for the prevention of smuggling, which had, for some time, been carried on to an extent highly injurious to the revenue. The effect of these measures, and of various economical regulations, was, that so early as the year 1786, the public income, after providing for all the services of every description, afforded a clear annual surplus of 900,000*l.*; and therefore, by proposing additional taxes to the amount of 100,000*l.* a year, he was enabled to bring forward his important plan for establishing a sinking fund of a million a year, to increase at compound interest, and to be unalienably applied to the redemption of the national debt.

Having accomplished this great and favorite object, he persevered in proposing a variety of other measures, all tending to augment the produce of the revenue. The chief of these were the manifest act, the design of which was to correct the frauds practised in obtaining

CHAP. bounties and drawbacks, and the acts for
 XV. letting the tax upon post horses by auction,
 1793. and for subjecting wine and tobacco to the
 excise laws, which greatly increased the legal
 consumption of those articles.

The total increase in the revenue, arising from these numerous measures, and from several important improvements in the mode of collecting existing taxes, amounted to almost four millions a year; and thus the income of the country, which in 1784 had fallen very short of its expenditure, in 1792 exceeded it by a considerable sum, although in that interval, besides defraying large extraordinary expences, some necessary additions had been made to the annual expenditure, and an effectual sinking fund had been established, which had already discharged 8,200,000*l.* of the public debt.

This excess induced Mr. Pitt to propose, that the sum of 400,000*l.* which remained in the exchequer after satisfying all demands, should be applied to the redemption of the national debt in 1792, besides the million with its accumulated interest, and that in future 200,000*l.* should be annually added to the sinking fund. In consequence of this excess, he also proposed the repeal of taxes to the amount of 200,000*l.* a year, studiously se-

lecting such as were most burdensome to the bulk of the people; and he intimated his sanguine hope, that the state of the revenue would, at a moderate distance of time, allow a farther repeal of taxes. Nor did he stop there. The augmentation of the revenue, and the confidence in government, having had such an effect upon public credit, as to raise the consols 3 per cent, from 54 to 97, since he came into office, he declared his full expectation, that in the next session, he should be able to propose a reduction in the interest of the four per cents, which, with other plans for the benefit of the public, he would unquestionably have accomplished, had peace continued.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

So anxious was Mr. Pitt, that nothing should interfere with the operation of the sinking fund, that instead of suffering the expences of the Russian armament, amounting to more than three millions, to be added to the national debt, as a permanent increase, he proposed taxes which should, in four years, discharge the whole of those expences; thus subjecting himself to the unpleasant task of burdening the people for that period, with taxes six times greater than would have been necessary, if the debt had been funded in the ordinary manner, and to a larger amount than

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

had ever been imposed in any one year : but being convinced, that this mode of defraying these expences would be ultimately for the public benefit, and would convey a high idea of the resources of the country to foreign powers, he did not shrink from the risk of incurring the odium, which might attend its adoption, though nothing of this kind had ever been attempted by any minister, since the commencement of the national debt.

The involved and complicated nature of the duties paid at the custom-house, had long been the subject of complaint ; but all former ministers had been deterred from attempting to remedy this evil, which had of course been gradually increasing with the numerous taxes imposed during the American war, not only by the labor which must attend the formation and establishment of a new system, but on account of very serious difficulties arising from the appropriation of several of these duties to the payment, in the first instance, of the interest of particular parts of the national debt. Mr. Pitt undertook the herculean task of consolidating all the duties paid upon every article imported or exported ; and the bill he introduced for that purpose, afforded great facility to the transaction of business at the custom-house, relieving merchants both from

delay, and from the expence of employing agents. He extended the same principle to the excise and stamps; in the former of which it operated as a considerable accommodation to large bodies of tradesmen; and in the latter, to all who were engaged in the profession of the law, and to the public in general. Although additional revenue was not the immediate object of these consolidations, he contrived to make them in some degree useful, even in that respect; and he obviated all the objections relative to the appropriated duties, by an arrangement, which was perfectly satisfactory to every stockholder, and indeed improved, rather than impaired, the security of those public creditors, who had a claim to priority of payment. The whole of this plan met with universal approbation, and was even warmly applauded by the leading members of opposition.

Having, while in opposition, objected to the practice of his predecessors, in distributing beneficial shares of loans, and lottery tickets, under the market price, among their private friends and the parliamentary supporters of government, he adopted a new plan of contracting for loans and lotteries, by means of sealed proposals from different persons, which were opened in the presence of each other; and

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

CHAP. while this competition ensured to the public,
 XV. the best terms which could be obtained under
 1793. existing circumstances, it cut off a very improper source of shewing favor to individuals, and increasing ministerial influence.

He introduced a bill for the appointment of commissioners to inquire into the state of the woods, forests, and other crown lands, with a view to the improvement of the landed property belonging to his majesty.

He caused a careful examination to be made into the losses of the American loyalists, and formed a plan, which was very generally approved, for making a suitable compensation to those unfortunate and deserving men, according to the nature and extent of their respective claims. Upon his proposal, nearly two millions were unanimously voted by parliament for this equitable purpose; but that the country might not be burdened by raising so large a sum at once, debentures were issued, bearing interest, which were to be gradually discharged by the annual profits of a lottery.

He provided an adequate compensation for those of our countrymen, who suffered any pecuniary loss by the cession of Florida to Spain, in consequence of the treaty of peace.

He introduced a complete and highly useful reform in the mode of advancing money to the heads of the great departments of national expenditure, and of auditing the public accounts; which had the effect of preventing considerable sums from remaining for a long period in the hands of individuals, to the detriment of the public, and of guarding against those frauds and losses, to which the old system was confessedly liable. He also regulated the fees and perquisites received by clerks and others in public offices, and abolished a variety of abuses which created expence and delay, and had long been the subject of most serious complaint. There was not indeed a single office connected with the revenue, in which, under Mr. Pitt's direction, the mode of conducting business was not materially improved; and besides economical and other useful arrangements, and a strict and speedy inquiry into all disbursements for the public service, every part of the national receipt and expenditure was simplified and rendered intelligible, by new methods of making up the accounts, which had hitherto been intricate and obscure in the extreme. Financial statements were likewise, upon his suggestion, constantly laid before the house of commons, for the purpose of enabling par-

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

liament and the public, to judge of the real situation of the country, with which they had hitherto been but little acquainted.

The only finance measure of Mr. Pitt, which remains to be mentioned, is, that great and beneficial act, which effectually secured the redemption of all future public debts, by requiring, that in every loan hereafter to be made, one per cent should be applied to the reduction of the capital so created. By this regulation, all money borrowed for the public service must, even upon the unfavorable, and almost impossible, supposition of a 3 per cent fund redeemed at par, be repaid in 47 years; and upon every other supposition, in a shorter period. This and the sinking fund bill of 1786 will be lasting monuments of Mr. Pitt's provident wisdom; and the advantages derived from them ought to endear his memory to the present and every future generation.

Mr. Pitt's strict attention to economy, and his earnest desire to reduce the national debt, did not lead him to a parsimonious retrenchment in any branch of the public service: he directed seven millions to be expended in building and repairing ships, in the four years preceding 1789, after which, farther large sums were employed for the same laudable purpose; and thus he laid the foundation of

those splendid and important naval victories, which raised the glory of the nation, and prevented this country from becoming the theatre of war.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

The commercial treaty with France was a work of great labor and nicety ; and Mr. Pitt accomplished it with such correct attention to all the numerous and complicated interests concerned in the measure, that it gave satisfaction to every description of traders and manufacturers throughout the kingdom.

Commercial treaties were entered into with other foreign powers, the advantages of which and of Mr. Pitt's various regulations relative to manufactures, trade, and commerce, will best appear by stating a few plain and simple facts.

The average annual importation of tea by the East India company and their officers, previously to 1784, was between five and six millions of pounds ; and after the commutation act operated in its full extent, it exceeded twenty millions. In 1783, the value of British goods exported to India, was about 100,000*l*. and in 1791, it exceeded 600,000*l*. The value of goods imported into this kingdom in 1783, was 13 millions ; in 1790, 19 millions. The value of goods exported in the former

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

year, was 15 millions, in the latter 20 millions*; and in the same short period, the number of ships employed in the trade of the kingdom, was increased in the proportion of five to three.

Notwithstanding this great increase in the produce of the taxes, and in the trade of the country, Mr. Pitt, sacrificing his patronage as minister, abolished 441 patent and other revenue offices, which caused a considerable saving to the public; but at the same time, he judged it expedient to raise the salaries of some of the inferior officers of the customs and excise for the purpose of removing the temptation to corruption, to which their inadequate pay had before exposed them, and which operated to the detriment both of the revenue and of the fair trader.

The pecuniary embarrassment of the prince of Wales being brought before the house of commons by an opposition member, with the avowed approbation of his royal highness, Mr. Pitt prevented any hostile debate upon that delicate subject, by proposing

* This custom house valuation of exports and imports is certainly not accurate; but it serves to shew the proportions in the different years here mentioned, which is the principal object I have in view.

an arrangement to which all parties readily acceded.

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

The new and extraordinary situation in which the country was placed, by the sudden illness of the king, gave rise to discussions, in which Mr. Pitt was again called upon to stand forward in support of the genuine principles of the constitution. In the year 1784, he had defended the just and legal prerogative of the sovereign; and now he maintained, with equal success, the essential privileges of the people, by asserting the right of their representatives. He carried through the house of commons, a bill for the establishment of a regency, amidst difficulties which required the greatest talents and soundest judgement to surmount; and his conduct upon that unprecedented and trying occasion, raised him still higher in the estimation of all ranks and descriptions of persons.

The bills proposed by Mr. Pitt, for the government of the British possessions in the East Indies, not only relieved the company from present embarrassments, but gradually produced a most advantageous change in the general state of their affairs*; and put an end to all those peculations, extortions, and op-

* India stock, which in December 1783, was 119, in November 1792, was 212.

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

pressions, which had so long disgraced the name of Britons, and, at last, endangered the very existence of our power in India. The great improvement, which immediately took place, and has ever since continued, in all the concerns of that important part of the empire, without creating any undue influence at home, incontestably established the wisdom of Mr. Pitt's regulations upon a subject, confessedly attended with more than ordinary difficulty, and respecting which opinions of the most opposite nature had been entertained. All subsequent administrations have been studious to persevere in a system, the merit of which they found confirmed by actual experience.

Mr. Pitt introduced a bill for new modelling the government of Canada upon the principles of the British constitution, and for dividing the country into two distinct provinces, which has been the means of preserving that colony in a state of tranquillity, and of increasing its population and trade. This bill also provided for the establishment of a protestant episcopal church in Canada, and for the maintenance of the parochial clergy.

It was Mr. Pitt's anxious desire, to form a commercial intercourse between England and Ireland, which should be beneficial to both

countries ; but, after much labor and long discussion, he was under the necessity of abandoning the preparatory resolutions, which had passed the parliament of Great Britain for that purpose, in consequence of the arts and misrepresentations of a faction in Ireland. By the prudent exertions, however, of the Irish government, acting under his directions, a rising spirit of turbulence and disaffection was checked, and public tranquillity preserved in that kingdom.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

He failed, also, in his endeavors to introduce a new system of fortifications for the protection of our dock-yards in time of war ; the house of commons refusing their assent to the plan he proposed, although sanctioned by the most distinguished officers, both in the naval and military service. But he prevailed upon parliament to allow the erection of additional fortifications in our West Indian islands, as a security against a sudden attack from an enemy.

Disputes having arisen between the English and French subjects in the East Indies, concerning the meaning of one of the articles of the treaty of peace, a negotiation, under the direction of Mr. Pitt, was entered into with the court of Versailles, and an explanatory convention signed, which

CHAP. removed all doubt, and prevented future dis-
 { XV. satisfaction.

1793. A convention was likewise signed between the courts of London and Madrid, relative to the evacuation of the Mosquito shore ; by which the boundaries of the British and Spanish dominions in that part of the world were defined, and the respective rights of the subjects of the two countries ascertained and settled.

A bill was prepared with Mr. Pitt's sanction, and carried by him through parliament, for establishing a new system of police in the metropolis, which corrected many evils, and has been productive of most beneficial effects.

In the former part of the period, now under consideration, Mr. Pitt was a warm, though unsuccessful, advocate for a reform of parliament, which had been a favorite object of his early youth ; but in the year 1792, when the most dangerous political doctrines were eagerly circulated, and the most mischievous designs were in contemplation, under the mask of parliamentary reform, he avowed his fixed determination to oppose every attempt of that kind ; and by his advice, a royal proclamation was issued, and other steps were taken, for the purpose of checking the progress of opinions

and practices, which threatened to interrupt the internal peace, and subvert the constitution, of the country.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

The impartial and honorable part he took in the debates upon the charges against Mr. Hastings, and his full and able discussion of the great constitutional question of the abatement of impeachments by a dissolution of parliament, obtained the unreserved applause of his most determined political adversaries.

His zealous and continued exertions, in exposing the injustice and impolicy of the slave trade, materially contributed to the removal of the apprehensions and prejudices, at first entertained upon the subject, and laid the foundation for the entire abolition of that infamous traffic, at a future period. This was a question, which called forth all the sensibilities of his heart; and the speeches, in which he pleaded the cause of the unhappy negroes, are among the most beautiful specimens of his eloquence, abounding in pathos, and lively sallies of imagination, as well as sound and convincing argument.

He successfully opposed repeated motions for the repeal of the corporation and test acts, which were justly regarded as the firmest bulwarks of the British constitution; and he manifested his zeal in defence of the national

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

faith, by opposing a motion for the repeal of the penal statutes against those who denied the doctrine of the Trinity; considering these restraints as no infringement of civil rights, or of the true principles of religious toleration, to which no one could be a more sincere friend.

While Mr. Pitt, by a series of most important measures, was improving the internal situation of these kingdoms, supporting the respective rights of the different branches of the constitution, and providing for the security and welfare of our distant possessions, both in the east and in the west, displaying at the same time a minute and perfect knowledge of the various subjects brought by others under the consideration of parliament, and resisting all attempts, tending to endanger the established form of government, in church or state, he was equally attentive to every thing passing upon the continent, which could in any degree affect the honor or interest of this country.

By a wise and timely interposition, he was instrumental in restoring the stadtholder to the full enjoyment of that power, of which he had been unjustly deprived by a predominant faction, and in preventing France from establishing an influence in Holland, which must

have been highly prejudicial to Great Britain. By forming a close alliance between Prussia, Holland, and Great Britain, he checked the ambitious projects of Russia and Austria, saved both Sweden and Turkey from ruin; and preserved that balance of power which is essential to the independence and safety of Europe. He vindicated, with becoming spirit, the national dignity, by requiring from Spain, full reparation for the insult and injury received by our countrymen, at Nootka; and obtained the acknowledgment of rights, which had long been the subject of jealousy and dispute between the two kingdoms. These repeated instances of vigilance and energy, and the power and vigor displayed in the several armaments, raised Great Britain to the highest degree of credit and influence in foreign courts.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

With signal prudence and moderation, and from a real desire for the continuance of peace, he abstained from all interference in the internal concerns of France, and from taking any advantage of the distracted state of that kingdom; disdaining to follow the example of the French ministers, in fomenting the disturbances in America, and in attacking England, when embarrassed and weakened by

CHAP. the war with her own colonies. He rejected
 XV. all the solicitations of Austria and Prussia;
 1793. he refused to listen to the applications of the
 emigrant princes; he declined the offers of the
 French West Indian islands; and he strictly
 complied with the terms of the commercial
 treaty, not suffering himself to be diverted
 from this line of just and pacific policy, by
 insulting decrees, or even by naval equip-
 ments. This undeviating observance, how-
 ever, of neutrality, did not prevent the usurpers
 of power in France from making every exer-
 tion, in equal violation of the law of nations,
 and of the faith of treaties, to propagate
 their revolutionary principles in this kingdom,
 and to excite the people to acts of sedition
 and rebellion. The success of these endea-
 vors, and the manifestation of a hostile dis-
 position on the part of France, caused parlia-
 ment to be suddenly assembled, and to pass,
 upon the recommendation of Mr. Pitt, bills
 and resolutions for the maintenance of public
 tranquillity, and for the augmentation of the
 army and navy. At length, on the first of
 February 1793, war was declared by the na-
 tional convention, against Great Britain; an
 event, for which the public had been for some
 time prepared, and which, they well knew,

had not been provoked by any aggressive or unfriendly conduct in our ministers.

CHAP.
XV.

1793.

Had Mr. Pitt, at an early period of the revolution, proposed to counteract, by open interference, the democratic proceedings in France, or to join in any confederacy of continental powers against that country, it is highly probable, that he would not have been supported, either by the house of commons or by the public—he would not at least have obtained that almost universal concurrence, which was the consequence of England remaining perfectly neuter, and making no war-like preparation whatever, till the conduct of the convention and executive council was such, as to leave no doubt in any unprejudiced mind, with respect to the system they had adopted, of extending their own dominions by foreign conquest, and of subverting, by the joint operation of intrigue and force, every established government in Europe. A similar observation is applicable to the steps, which Mr. Pitt took for securing the internal tranquillity of this kingdom. It was necessary, that the real designs of the seditious societies should be so fully manifest, and the mischievous tendency of their principles so clearly evinced by facts, that the danger, with

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

which the country was threatened, could not be denied by any impartial person, before the people would consent to the strong measures, which were essential to the preservation of the blessings they enjoyed. This jealousy of their liberties belongs to men living under a limited monarchy ; and therefore Mr. Pitt, though he saw the evil at a distance, and anxiously watched its gradual approach, was yet aware, that time must be given for its coming so near, as to be visible to every common beholder, before it would be wise, or rather practicable, to oppose its farther progress. He perceived the formidable co-operation of external and internal enemies ; but the former could not be effectually resisted, except by open war, nor the latter without coercive acts of the legislature ; and he was persuaded, that neither of these expedients, exclusive of his own earnest wish not to have recourse to them, would be approved, till their necessity was obvious and incontestable. Let it not then be supposed, that Mr. Pitt, though by no means of a disposition to take premature alarm, did not discern the danger, till he applied to parliament for a remedy : like every other minister of a free country, he was compelled to consult public opinion ; and by persisting, with

sincere zeal, though with little hope of success, in his endeavors to prevent a rupture, till war was actually declared by France in the midst of a negotiation for preserving peace, and by abstaining from all extraordinary domestic regulations, till the public tranquillity, notwithstanding every legal precaution, was disturbed by actual insurrection, he convinced both the parliament and the people, that the difficulties, with which the country had to contend, were equally inevitable and alarming; and that nothing but the most vigorous exertions at home and abroad, with additional powers vested in the executive government, could preserve the constitution, and secure the independence of Great Britain.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

The wisdom of Mr. Pitt's conduct, indeed, clearly appeared from the effect it produced upon some of the former opponents of his administration. Nothing but a sense of the most serious public danger, and a conviction of the absolute necessity of strengthening the hands of government, could have induced those respectable members of both houses, who had for nine years acted with the most determined hostility against Mr. Pitt, to stand forward in his support, and to relinquish all connexion with the leader of their party;

CHAP.

XV.

1793.

who, besides other distinguished talents, is known to have possessed, in an extraordinary degree, the faculty of personally attaching to himself his political adherents. The junction of the duke of Portland and his friends with Mr. Pitt, on the present occasion, reflected equal honor upon both; and this sudden change in so large a body of men, whose characters precluded all suspicion, either of unworthy motive or of weak delusion, must be considered as an early and unequivocal testimony in favor of those principles, a perseverance in which is acknowledged to have been the means, under Providence, of saving this kingdom and all Europe, from the galling yoke of Jacobinical tyranny.

Such were the proofs which Mr. Pitt gave, at an age, which added greatly to their effect upon his contemporaries, and must ever render them more interesting to succeeding generations, of consummate ability, undaunted firmness, sound judgment, and honorable policy; and such were his numerous and eminent services to his country, in the first nine years of his administration, during a period of peace. From this time to the end of his life, we shall have to follow him in the wise and vigorous conduct of a war, attended

with circumstances and difficulties unexampled in the history of the world ; and which the prosperity, strength, and resources derived from his former measures, together with his salutary and effectual provisions for war at the time of profound and apparently settled peace, principally enabled the nation to support, and at length to bring to a most brilliant conclusion.

CHAP.
XV.
1793.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

Printed by Luke Hansard & Sons,
near Lincoln's-Inn Fields.

DA
522
P6T6
1822
v.3

Tomline, (Sir) George
Pretyman, bart., Bp. of
Winchester

Memoirs of the life of
the Right Honorable William
Pitt 4th ed.

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
